



EX LIBRIS
UNIVERSITATIS
BRISTOLLIENSIS

SHELF

D.A. 55794

S. C. Whitwell

or F. W. S. 1894

TEXT-BOOK OF BIOLOGY.

PART I.—VERTEBRATA.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

https://archive.org/details/b21445783_0001

The University Tutorial Series.



TEXT-BOOK OF BIOLOGY.

BY

H. G. WELLS, B.Sc. Lond., F.C.P.,

LECTURER IN BIOLOGY AT UNIVERSITY TUTORIAL COLLEGE.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION

BY

G. B. HOWES, F.L.S., F.Z.S.,

ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF ZOOLOGY, ROYAL COLLEGE OF SCIENCE, LONDON.

PART I.—VERTEBRATA.

Second and Revised Edition.



LONDON: W. B. CLIVE,
UNIVERSITY CORRESPONDENCE COLLEGE PRESS.

WAREHOUSE: 13 BOOKSELLERS ROW, STRAND, W.C.



55734

CONTENTS.

PAGE

INTRODUCTION... .. 111

PREFACE vii

THE RABBIT—

I. External Form and General Consideration ... 1

II. The Alimentary Canal of the Rabbit... 6

III. The Circulation ... 12

IV. The Amoeba, Cells, and Tissue ... 19

V. The Skelcton ... 31

VI. Muscle and Nerve ... 40

VII. The Nervous System ... 45

VIII. Renal and Reproductive Organs ... 56

IX. Classificatory Points ... 58

X. Questions and Excreises ... 62

THE FROG—

I. General Anatomy ... 65

II. The Skull of the Frog (and the Vertebrate Skull
generally) ... 73

III. Questions on the Frog ... 81

THE DOG-FISH—

I. General Anatomy ... 83

II. Questions on the Dog-Fish ... 94

AMPHIOXUS—

I. Anatomy ... 95

II. The Devlopment of Amphioxus ... 102

III. Questions on Amphioxus ... 106

DEVELOPMENT—

The Development of the Frog...	...	...	...	...	107
The Development of the Fowl	...	...	...	...	116
The Development of the Rabbit	...	...	...	...	122
The Theory of Evolution	...	...	...	...	127
Questions on Embryology	...	...	...	...	133
MISCELLANEOUS QUESTIONS...	...	...	...	...	138
NOTE ON MAKING COMPARISONS	...	...	...	...	137
SYLLABUS OF PRACTICAL WORK	...	...	...	...	140

INTRODUCTION.

IN the year 1884 I was invited to give tuition by correspondence, in Biology. Although disposed at the time to ridicule the idea of imparting instruction in natural science by letter, I gladly accepted the opportunity thus afforded me of ascertaining for myself what could and could not be accomplished in that direction. Anyone familiar with the scope of biological enquiry, and the methods of biological instruction, will not need to be reminded that it is only by the most rigorous employment of precise directions for observation, that any good results are to be looked for at the hand of the elementary student. True to this principle, I determined to issue to my correspondence pupils rigid instructions, and to demand in return faithful annotated drawings of facts observed in their usage. In the case of two among the few students who passed through my hands, the result far exceeded my most sanguine anticipations. The notes sent in by one of them—a man working at a distance, alone and unaided—far excelled those wrung from many a student placed under the most favourable surroundings; and their promise for the future has been fulfilled to the utmost, the individual in question being now a recognised investigator. It thus became clear that, notwithstanding the complex conditions of work in the biological field, tuition by correspondence would suffice to awaken the latent abilities of a naturally qualified enquirer. The average members of a

University Correspondence Class will be found neither better nor worse than those of any other, and they may therefore pass unnoticed; if, however, the correspondence system of tuition may furnish the means of arousing a latent aptitude, when the possibilities of other methods of approach are excluded—and, in so doing, of elevating the individual to that position for which he was by nature qualified, ensuring him the introduction to the one sphere of labour for which he was born—it will have created its own defence, and have merited the confidence of all right-thinking people. The plucking of one such brand from the burning is ample compensation for the energy expended on any number of average dullards, who but require to be left alone to find their natural level.

Mr. Wells' little book is avowedly written for examination purposes, and in conformity with the requirements of the now familiar "type system" of teaching. Recent attempts have been made to depreciate this. While affording a discipline in detailed observation and manipulation second to that of no other branch of learning, it provides for that "deduction" and "verification" by which all science has been built up; and this appears to me ample justification for its retention, as the most rational system which can be to-day adopted. Evidence that its alleged shortcomings are due rather to defective handling than to any inherent weakness of its own, would not be difficult to produce. Although rigid in its discipline, it admits of commentatorial treatment, which, while heightening the interest of the student, is calculated to stimulate alike his ambition and his imagination. That the sister sciences of Botany and Zoology fall under one discipline, is expressed in the English usage of the term "Biology." Experience has shown that the best work in either department has been produced by those who have acquired an all-round knowledge of at least the elementary stages of both; and, that the advanced

morphologist and physiologist are alike the better for a familiarity with the principles—not to say with the progressive advancement—of each other's domain, is to-day undeniable. These, and other allied considerations, render it advisable that the elementary facts of morphology and physiology should be presented to the beginner side by side—a principle too frequently neglected in books which, like this one, are specially written for the biological neophyte. Although the student is the wiser for the actual observation of the facts of nature, he becomes the better only when able to apply them, as, for example, by the judicious construction of elementary generalizations, such as are introduced into the pages of this work. So long as these generalizations, regarded as first attempts to deduce “laws” in the form of “generalized statements of facts based upon observation,” are properly introduced into an elementary text-book, intended for the isolated worker cut off from the lecture room, their intercalation is both healthy and desirable.

Mr. Wells has kept these precepts constantly in mind in the preparation of his work, and in the formulation of his plans for its future extension, thereby enhancing the value of the book itself, and, at the same time, discouraging the system of pure cram, which is alien to the discipline of biological science.

G. B. HOWES.

ROYAL COLLEGE OF SCIENCE,
SOUTH KENSINGTON;

November 30, 1892.

P R E F A C E.



No method of studying—more especially when the objects of study are tangible things—can rival that prosecuted under the direction and in the constant presence of a *teacher* who has also a living and vivid knowledge of the matter which he handles with the student. In the ideal world there is a plentiful supply of such teachers, and easy access to their teaching, but in this real world only a favoured few enjoy these advantages. Through causes that cannot be discussed here, a vast number of solitary workers are scattered through the country, to whom sustained help in this form is impossible, or possible only in days stolen from a needed vacation; and to such students especially does this book appeal, as well as to those more fortunate learners who are within reach of orderly instruction, but anxious to save their teachers' patience and their own time by some preliminary work.

One of the most manifest disadvantages of book-work, under the conditions of the solitary worker, is the rigidity of its expressions; if the exact meaning is doubtful, he cannot ask a question. This has been kept in view throughout; the writer has, above all, sought to be explicit—has, saving oversights, used no uncommon or technical term without a definition or a clear indication of its meaning.

In this study of Biology, the perception and memory of *form* is a very important factor indeed. Every student should draw sketches of his dissections, and accustom himself to

copying book diagrams, in order to train his eye to the perception of details he might otherwise disregard. The drawing required is within the reach of all; but for those who are very inexperienced, tracing figures is a useful preliminary exercise.

By the time the student has read the "Circulation of the Rabbit" (§§ 34 to 49), he will be ready to begin dissection. It is possible to hunt to death even such a sound educational maxim as the "thing before the name," and we are persuaded, by a considerable experience, that dissection before some such preparatory reading is altogether a mistake. At the end of the book is a syllabus (with suggestions) for practical work, originally drawn up by the writer for his own private use with the evening classes of the University Tutorial College—classes of students working mainly in their spare time for the London examination, and at an enormous disadvantage, as regards the number of hours available, in comparison with the leisurely students of a University laboratory. This syllabus may, perhaps, by itself, serve a useful purpose in some cases, but in this essential part of the study the presence of some experienced overlooker to advise, warn, and correct, is at first almost indispensable.

A few words may, perhaps, be said with respect to the design of this volume. It is manifestly modelled upon the syllabus of the Intermediate Examination in Science of London University. That syllabus, as at present constituted, appears to me to afford considerable scope for fairly efficient biological study. The four types dealt with in this book are extremely convenient for developing the methods of comparative anatomy and morphological embryology. Without any extensive reference to related organisms, these four forms, and especially the three vertebrata, may be made to explain and illustrate one another in a way that cannot fail to be

educational in the truest sense. After dealing with the rabbit, therefore, as an organic mechanism, our sections upon the frog and dog-fish, and upon development, are simply statements of differences, and a commentary, as it were, upon the anatomy of the mammalian type. In the concluding chapter, a few suggestions of the most elementary ideas of the process of organic modification are given. In this way it is hoped to make this first part of our biological course complete in itself, and of some real and permanent value to the student. And the writer is convinced that not only is a constant insistence upon resemblances and differences, and their import, intellectually the most valuable, but also the most interesting, and therefore the easiest, way of studying animal anatomy. That chaotic and breathless cramming of terms misunderstood, tabulated statements, formulated "tips," and lists of names, in which so many students, in spite of advice, waste their youth, is, I sincerely hope, as impossible with this book as it is useless for the purposes of a London candidate. On the other hand, our chief endeavour has been to render the matter of the book clear, connected, progressive, and easily assimilable. In the second part, Plants, Unicellular Organisms, and Invertebrata will be dealt with, in a wider and less detailed view of the entire biological province.

This book will speedily, under the scrutiny of the critical reader, reveal abundant weaknesses. For these the author claims the full credit. For whatever merit it may possess, he must, however, acknowledge his profound indebtedness to his former teacher, Professor Howes. Not only has the writer enjoyed in the past the privilege of Professor Howes' instruction and example, but he has, during the preparation of this work, received the readiest help, advice, and encouragement from him—assistance as generous as it was unmerited, and as unaffected as it was valuable.

The publication of a second and revised edition of this Part affords the author an opportunity of expressing his sense of the general kindliness of his reviewers, and of the help they have given him in improving this maiden effort. To no one is there vouchsafed such a facility in the discovery of errors in a book as to its author, so soon as it has passed beyond his power of correction. Hence the general tone of encouragement (and in some cases the decided approval) of the members of this anonymous tribunal was a very pleasant and unexpected termination to a period of considerable remorse and apprehension.

I have been able through their counsel, and the experience I have had while using this book in teaching, to correct several printers' errors and to alter various ambiguous or misleading expressions, as well as to bring the book up to date again in one or two particulars.

My thanks are particularly due to my friend Miss Robbins, who has very kindly redrawn the occasionally rather blottesque figures of the first edition. Not only have these plates gained immensely in grace and accuracy, but the lettering is now distinct—an improvement that any student who has had to hunt my reference letters in the first edition will at once appreciate.

H. G. WELLS.

December, 1893.

THE RABBIT.

I. *External Form and General Considerations.*

§ 1. It is unnecessary to enter upon a description of the appearance of this familiar type, but it is not perhaps superfluous, as we proceed to consider its anatomy, to call attention to one or two points in its external, or externally apparent, structure. Most of our readers will already know that it belongs to that one of the two primary animal divisions which is called the *vertebrata*, and that the distinctive feature which places it in this division is the possession of a **spinal column** or backbone, really a *series* of small ring-like bones, the *vertebrae* (Fig. 1 *v.b.*) strung together, as it were, on the main nerve axis, the spinal cord (Fig. 1 *s.c.*). This spinal column can be felt along the neck and back to the tail. This **tail** is small, tilted up, and conspicuously white beneath, and it serves as a "recognition mark" to guide the young when, during feeding, an alarm is given and a bolt is made for the burrows. In those more primitive (older and simpler-fashioned) *vertebrata*, the fishes, the tail is much larger and far more important, as compared with the rest of the body, than it is in most of the air-inhabiting vertebrates. In the former it is invariably a great muscular mass to propel the body forward; in the latter it may disappear, as in the frog, be simply a feather-bearing stump, as in the pigeon, a fly flicker, as in the cow or horse, a fur cape in the squirrel, or be otherwise reduced and modified to meet special requirements.

§ 2. At the fore end, or, as English zoologists prefer to say, *anterior* end, of the vertebral column of the rabbit, is of course the skull, containing the anterior portion of the nerve axis, the brain (Fig. 1 *br.*). Between the head and what is called "the body," in the more restricted sense of the word, is the **neck**. The neck gives freedom of move-

ment to the head, enables the animal to look this way and that, to turn its ears about to determine the direction of a sound, and to perform endless motions in connexion with biting and so forth easily. We may note that in types which swim through the water, the neck does not appear—in the fish and frog, for instance—and the head simply widens out as one passes back to the body. The high resistance offered by water necessitates this tendency to a eigar or ship outline, just as it has determined the eigar shape of the ordinary fish torpedo.

§ 3. In the body of the rabbit, as examined from the outside, we can make out by feeling two distinct regions, just as we might in the body of a man; anteriorly a bony cage, having the *ribs* at the sides, a rod-like bone in front, the *sternum* (Fig. 1 *stm.*), and the backbone behind, and called the chest or **thorax**; and posteriorly a part called the **abdomen**, which has no bony protection over its belly, or *ventral* surface. These parts together with the neck constitute the **trunk**. As a consequence of these things, in the backbone of the rabbit there are four regions: the neck, or *cervical* part, consisting of seven vertebrae, the *thoracic* part of twelve joined to ribs, the *abdominal* (also called the *lumbar*) region of seven without ribs, and the tail or *caudal* of about fifteen. Between the *lumbar* and *caudal* come four vertebrae, the *sacral*, which tend to run together into a bony mass as the animal grows old, and which form a firm attachment for the base of the hind limb.

§ 4. The thorax and abdomen are separated by a partition, the **diaphragm** (Fig. 1 *dia.*). This structure is distinctive of that class of the vertebrata called **mammals**, and which includes man, most of the larger and commoner land animals, and the whales and manatee. We shall find later that it is essentially connected with the perfection of air breathing to which this group has attained. Another characteristic shared by all mammals, and by no other creatures, is the presence of **hair**. In birds we have an equally characteristic cover in the feathers, the frog is naked, and among the fishes we find either naked skins or scales.

§ 5. The short strong fore limbs are adapted to the burrowing habit, and have five digits; the hind limbs are very much longer and muscular, enable the animal to progress rapidly by short leaps, and they have four toes. If the student thinks it worth while to attempt to remember the number of digits—it is the fault of examiners if any value does attach to such intrinsically valueless facts—he should associate the number 54 (5 in front, 4 behind) with the rabbit, and observe that with the frog the reverse is the case.

§ 6. We may note here the meaning of certain terms we shall be constantly employing. The head end of the rabbit is *anterior*, the tail end *posterior*, the backbone side of the body—the upper side in life—is *dorsal*, the breast and belly side, the lower side of the animal, is *ventral*. If we imagine the rabbit sawn asunder, as it were, by a plane passing through the head and tail, that would be the *median* plane, and parts on either side of it are *lateral*, and left or right according as they lie to the *animal's* left or right. In a limb, or in the internal organs, the part nearest the *central* organ, or axis, is *proximal*, the more remote or terminal parts are *distal*. For instance, the mouth is anteriorly placed, the tongue on its ventral wall; the tongue is median, the eyes are lateral, and the fingers are distal to the elbow. The student must accustom himself to these words, and avoid, in his descriptions, the use of such terms as “above,” “below,” “outside,” which vary with the position in which we conceive the animal placed.

§ 7. So much for the general form; we may next note a few facts of general knowledge, in connection with the rabbit's life-activity. In a day of the rabbit's life a considerable amount of work is done—the animal runs hither and thither, for instance; in other words, a certain mass of matter is moved through space, and for that we know force must be exerted. Whence comes the force?

§ 8. We find the rabbit occupies a considerable amount of its time in taking in vegetable matter, consisting chiefly of more or less complex combustible and unstable organic

compounds. It is a pure vegetarian, and a remarkably moderate drinker. Some, but only a small proportion, of the vegetable matter it eats, leaves its body comparatively unchanged, in little pellets, the *faeces*, in the process of *defaecation*. For the rest we have to account.

§ 9. We find, also, that the rabbit breathes air into its lungs, which is returned to the atmosphere with a lessened amount of oxygen, and the addition of a perceptible amount of **carbon dioxide**. The rabbit also throws off, or *excretes*, a fluid, the *urine*, which consists of **water** with a certain partially oxydised substance containing nitrogen, and called **urea**, and other less important salts. The organs within the body, by which the urine is separated, are called the kidneys.

§ 10. Repeating these facts in other words, the rabbit takes into its body complex and unstable organic compounds containing nitrogen, carbon, hydrogen, a certain amount of oxygen, a small quantity of sulphur, and still smaller amounts of other elements. It also breathes in oxygen.

§ 11. It returns a certain rejected part of its food comparatively unchanged. Besides this, it returns carbon dioxide and water, which are completely oxydised, and very simple and stable bodies, and urica—a less completely oxydised compound, but a very simple one compared with the food constituents.

§ 12. Now, the chemist tells us that when a stable body is formed, or when an unstable compound decomposes into simpler stable ones, force is evolved. The oxydation of carbon, for instance, in the fireplace, is the formation of the stable compound called carbon dioxide, and light and heat are evolved. The explosion of dynamite, again, is the decomposition of an unstable compound. Hence, we begin to perceive that the force—the vital force—which keeps the rabbit moving, is supplied by the *decomposition and partial oxydation* of compounds contained in its food, to carbon dioxide, water, urea, and smaller quantities of other substances.

§ 13. This is the roughest statement of the case possible, but it will give the general idea underlying our next chapters. We shall consider how the food enters the body and is taken up into the system, how it is conveyed to the muscles in the limbs, to the nerve centres, and to wherever *work* is done, to be there decomposed and partially oxydised, and finally how the products of its activity—the *katastases*, of which the three principal are carbon dioxide, water, and urea—are removed from the body.

§ 14. There are one or two comparatively modern terms that we may note here. This decomposition of unstable chemical compounds, releasing energy, is called **kataboly**. A reverse process, which has a less conspicuous part in our first view of the animal's life action, by which unstable compounds are built up and energy stored, is called **anaboly**. The *katastases* are the products of *kataboly*.

§ 15. In an ordinary animal, locomotion and other activity predominate over nutritive processes, which fact we may express, in the terms just given, by saying that *kataboly* prevails over *anaboly*. An animal, as we have just explained, is an apparatus for the decomposition and partial oxydation of certain compounds, and these are obtained either directly or indirectly—through other animals, in the case of meat-eaters—from the vegetable kingdom. As the student will learn early in his botanical reading, the typical plant has, in its green colouring matter, *chlorophyll*, a trap to catch the radiating energy of the sun, and to accomplish, by the absorption of that energy, the synthesis (building up) of those organic compounds which the animal destroys. The typical plant is, on the whole, passive and synthetic, or anabolic; the typical animal, active and katabolic; and the excess of *kataboly* over *anaboly* in the animal is compensated for by the anabolic work *stored up*, as it were, by the plant, which is, directly or indirectly, the animal's food.

II.—*The Alimentary Canal of the Rabbit.*

§ 16. Figure 1 represents the general anatomy of the rabbit, but is especially intended to show the *alimentary* (= food) canal, shortened to a certain extent, and with the proportions altered, in order to avoid any confusing complications. It is evidently simply a coiled tube—coiled for the sake of packing—with occasional dilatations, and with one side-shunt, the *caecum* (*ca.*), into which the food enters, and is returned to the main line, after probably absorbent action, imperfectly understood at present. A spiral fold in this *cul-de-sac*, which is marked externally by constrictions, has a directive influence on the circulation of its contents. The student should sketch Figure 1 once or twice, and make himself familiar with the order and names of the parts before proceeding. We have, in succession, the *mouth* (*M.*), separated from the nasal passage (*Na.*) above by the palate; the *pharynx* (*ph.*), where the right and left nasal passages open by the posterior nares into the mouth; the oesophagus (*es.*); the bag-like stomach, its left (§ 6) end being called the *cardiac* (*cd. st.*), and its right the *pyloric* end (*py.*); the U-shaped *duodenum* (*ddnm.*), and the very long and greatly coiled *ileum* (*il.*). The *duodenum* and *ileum* together form the *small intestine*; and the ileum is dilated at its distal end into a thick-walled *sacculus rotundus* (*s.r.*), beyond which point comes the *large intestine*. The *colon* (*co.*) and *rectum* (*r.*) continue the main line of the alimentary canal; but, at the beginning of the large intestine, there is also inserted a great side-shunt, the *caecum* (*ca.*), ending blindly in a fleshy *vermiform appendix* (*v. ap.*). The figure will indicate how the parts are related better than any verbal description can. Between the coiling alimentary tube and the body walls is a space, into which the student cuts when he begins dissecting; this is the *peritoneal cavity* (*pt.*). A thin, transparent mem-

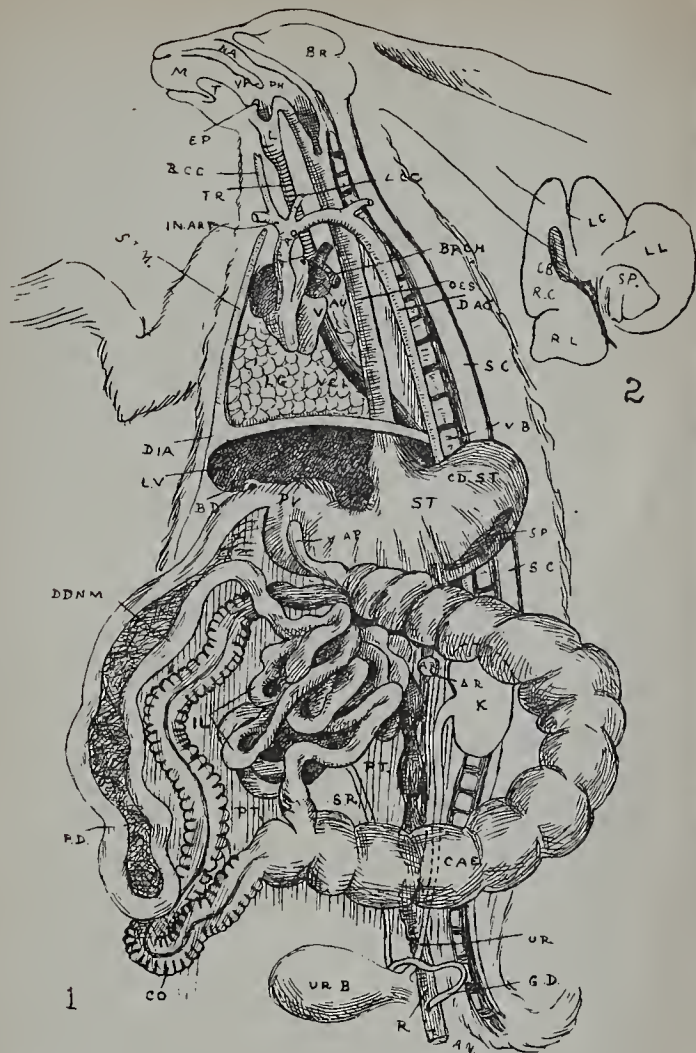
SHEET I.

Figure 1. Main facts of the Rabbit's Anatomy (diagrammatic).

<i>an.</i> , anus.	<i>l.</i> , larynx.
<i>a. ao.</i> , arch of the aorta.	<i>l. c. c.</i> , left common carotid artery.
<i>au.</i> , auricle.	<i>m.</i> , mouth.
<i>a. r.</i> , ad-renal body.	<i>na.</i> , nasal passage.
<i>br.</i> , brain.	<i>oes.</i> , oesophagus.
<i>b. d.</i> , bile duct.	<i>p. v.</i> , pyloric valve.
<i>brch.</i> , bronchus.	<i>p. d.</i> , pancreatic duct.
<i>cd. st.</i> , cardiac end of stomach.	<i>pt.</i> , peritoneal cavity.
<i>co.</i> , colon.	<i>r.</i> , rectum.
<i>cae.</i> , caecum.	<i>st.</i> , stomach.
<i>ddum.</i> , duodenum.	<i>s. r.</i> , sacculus rotundus.
<i>d. ao.</i> , dorsal aorta.	<i>s. c.</i> , spinal cord.
<i>dia.</i> , diaphragm.	<i>tr.</i> , trachea.
<i>ep.</i> , epiglottis.	<i>ur.</i> , ureter.
<i>g. d.</i> , genital duct (either sex).	<i>ur. b.</i> , urinary bladder.
<i>il.</i> , ileum.	<i>v. b.</i> , a vertebral body.
<i>in. art.</i> , innominate artery.	<i>v. ap.</i> , vermiform appendix.
<i>k.</i> , kidney.	<i>v. p.</i> , velum palatum.
<i>lj.</i> , lung.	<i>v.</i> , ventricle of heart.
<i>lv.</i> , liver.	<i>v. c. i.</i> , vena cava inferior.
<i>stm.</i> , sternum.	

Figure 2. The Liver (diagrammatic).

- g. b.*, the gall bladder.
r. l., r. c., l. l., l. c., right lateral and central, and left lateral and central, lobes respectively.
sp., the Spigelian lobe (fits into angle of stomach and oesophagus).



brane, the **mesentery**, holds the intestines in place, and binds them to the dorsal wall of this peritoneal space.

§ 17. The food stuffs of an animal, the unstable compounds destined ultimately to be worked into its life, and to leave it again in the form of *katastases* (§ 13), fall into two main divisions. The first of these includes the non-nitrogenous food stuffs, containing either carbon, together with hydrogen and oxygen in the proportion of H_2O (the *carbo-hydrates*), or carbon and hydrogen without oxygen (the *hydrocarbons*). The second division consists of the nitrogenous materials, containing also carbon, hydrogen, a certain amount of oxygen, sulphur, and possibly other elements. Among the **carbo-hydrates**, the commonest are starch and cellulose, which are insoluble bodies, and sugar, which is soluble. The hydrocarbons, fats, oils, and so on, form a comparatively small proportion of the rabbit's diet; the proverb of "oil and water" will remind the student that these are insoluble. The nitrogenous bodies have their type in the albumen of an egg; and muscle substance and the less modified living "protoplasm" of plants, a considerable proportion of the substance of seeds, bulbs, and so on, are albuminous bodies, or **proteids**. These also are insoluble bodies, or, when soluble, will not diffuse easily through animal membranes.

§ 18. Now, the essential problem which the digestive canal of the rabbit solves is to get these insoluble, or *quasi*-insoluble, bodies into its blood and system. They have to pass somehow into the circulation through the walls of the alimentary canal. In order that a compound should diffuse through a membrane, it must be both soluble and diffusible, and therefore an essential preliminary to the absorption of nutritive matter is its conversion into a diffusible soluble form. This is effected by certain fluids, formed either by the walls of the alimentary canal or by certain organs called **glands**, which open by ducts into it; all these fluids contain small quantities of organic compounds of the class called *ferments*, and these are the active agents in the change. The soluble form of the carbohydrates is sugar; proteids can be changed into the, of course, chemically equivalent but soluble and diffusible

peptones; and fats and oils undergo a more complicated, but finally similar, change.

§ 19. We shall discuss the structure and action of **glands** a little more fully in a subsequent chapter. Here we will simply say that they are organs forming each its characteristic fluid or **secretion**, and sending it by a conduit, the duct, to the point where its presence is required. The saliva in our mouths, tears, and perspiration, are examples of the secretions of glands.

§ 20. In the mouth of the rabbit the food is acted upon by the teeth and saliva. The saliva contains **ptyalin**, a ferment converting starch into sugar, and it also serves to moisten the food as it is ground up by the cheek teeth. It does not act on fat to any appreciable extent. The teeth of the rabbit are shown in Fig. XVIII., Sh. IV. The *incisor* teeth in front, two pairs above and one pair below (*i.*), are simply employed in grasping the food; the cheek teeth—the *premolars* (*pm.*) and *molars* (*m.*) behind—triturate the food by a complicated motion over each other. Their crowns are flat for this purpose, with harder ridges running across them.

§ 21. This grinding up of the food in the mouth invariably occurs in herbivorous animals, where there is a considerable amount of starch and comparatively little hydrocarbon in the food. By finely dividing the food, it ensures its intimate contact with the digestive ferment, ptyalin. In such meat-eaters as the cat and dog, where little starchy matter and much fat is taken, the saliva is, of course, of less importance, and this *mastication* does not occur. The cheek teeth of a dog (page 37), and more so of a cat, are sharp, and used for gnawing off fragments of food, which are swallowed at once. Between the incisors and premolars of a dog come the characteristic biting teeth, or *canines*, absent in the rabbit.

§ 22. The student will probably ask why the cheek teeth, which are all similar in appearance, are divided into premolars and molars. The rabbit has a set of milk molars—a *milk dentition*—which is followed by the permanent teeth, just

as in man. Those cheek teeth of the second set, which have predecessors in the first series, are called premolars; the ones posterior to these are the molars.

§ 23. After *mastication*, the food is worked by the tongue and cheeks into a saliva-soaked "bolus" and swallowed. The passage down the oesophagus is called *deglutition*. In the stomach it comes under the influence of the **gastric juice**, formed in little glandular pits in the stomach wall—the gastric (Fig. VIII., Sh. III.) and pyloric glands. This fluid is distinctly acid, its acidity being due to about one-tenth per cent. of **hydrochloric acid**, and it therefore stops any further action of the ptyalin, which can act only on neutral or slightly alkaline fluids. The gastric juice does not act on carbo-hydrates or hydrocarbons to any very noticeable degree. *Its essential property* is the conversion of proteids into peptones, and the ferment by which this is effected is called **pepsin**. Milk contains a peculiar soluble proteid, called casein, which is precipitated by a special ferment, the **rennet-ferment**, and the insoluble proteid, the *curd*, thus obtained is then acted on by the pepsin. In the manufacture of cheese, the rennet-ferment obtained from the stomach of a calf is used to curdle the milk.

§ 24. After the food has undergone digestion in the stomach it passes into the **duodenum**, the U-shaped loop of intestine immediately succeeding the stomach. The duodenum is separated from the stomach by a ring-like muscular valve, the *pylorus*; this valve belongs to the class of muscles called *sphincters*, which, under ordinary circumstances, are closed, but which relax to open the circular central aperture. The valve at the *anus*, which retains the faeces, is another instance of a sphincter.

§ 25. The food at this stage is called **chyme**; it is an acid and soup-like fluid—acid through the influence of the gastric juice. The temperature of the animal's body is sufficiently high to keep most of the fat in the food melted and floating in oily drops; much of the starch has been changed to sugar, and the solid proteids to soluble peptones, but many fragments of material still float unchanged.

§ 26. It meets now with the **bile**, a greenish fluid secreted by that large and conspicuous gland the liver. The bile is not simply a digestive secretion, like the saliva or the gastric juice; it contains matters destined to mix in, and after a certain amount of change to be passed out of the body with, the faeces; among these substances, of which *some portion* is doubtless excretory, are compounds containing *sulphur*—the *bile salts*. There is also a colouring matter, *bili verdin*, which may possibly also be excretory. If the student will compare § § 10 and 11, he will notice that in those paragraphs no account is taken of the sulphur among the katastases, the account does not balance, and he will at once see that here probably is the missing item on the outgoing side. The bile, through the presence of these salts, is strongly alkaline, and so stops the action of the gastric juice, and prepares for that of the pancreas, which can act only in an alkaline medium. The fermentive action of the bile is trifling; it dissolves fats, to a certain extent, and is *antiseptic*, that is, it prevents putrefaction to which the chyme might be liable; it also seems to act as a natural purgative.

§ 27. The bile, as we shall see later, is by no means the sole product of the liver.

§ 28. The **pancreatic juice**, the secretion of the pancreas, is remarkable as acting on all the food stuffs that have not already become soluble. It *emulsifies* fats, that is, it breaks the drops up into extremely small globules, forming a milky fluid, and it furthermore has a fermentive action upon them; it splits them up into *fatty acids*, and the soluble body glycerine. The fatty acids combine with alkaline substances (§ 26) to form bodies which belong to the chemical group of *Soaps*, and which are soluble also. The pancreatic juice also attacks any proteids that have escaped the gastric juice, and converts them into peptones, and any residual starch into sugar. Hence, by this stage, in the duodenum, all the food constituents noticed in § 17 are changed into soluble forms. There are, probably, three distinct ferments in the pancreatic juice acting respectively on starch, fat, and proteid, but they have not been isolated, and the term *pancreatin* is sometimes used to suggest the three together.

§ 29. A *succus entericus*, a saliva-like fluid secreted by numerous small glands in the intestine wall (Brunner's glands, Lieberkühnian follicles), probably aids, to an unknown but comparatively small extent, in the digestive processes.

§ 30. The walls of the whole of the small intestine are engaged in the **absorption** of the soluble results of digestion. In the duodenum, especially, small processes, the **villi**, project into the cavity, and, being like the small hairs of velvet pile, and as thickly set, give its inner coat a velvety appearance. In a villus we find (Fig. IX., Sh. III.) a series of small blood-vessels and with it another vessel called a *lacteal*. The lacteals run together into larger and larger branches until they form a main trunk, the *thoracic duct*, which opens into the blood circulation at a point near the heart; but of this we shall speak further later. They contain, after a meal, a fluid called *chyle*.

§ 31. Emulsified fats pass into the chyle. Water and diffusible salts certainly pass into the vein. The course taken by the peptones is uncertain, but Professor Foster favours the chyle in the case of the rabbit—the student should read his *Text-book of Physiology*, Pt. II., Ch. I., § XI., if interested in the further discussion of this question.

§ 32. The processes that occur in the remaining portions of the alimentary canal are imperfectly understood. The **caecum** is so large in the rabbit that it must almost certainly be of considerable importance. In carnivorous animals it may be so much reduced as to be practically absent. An important factor in the diet of the herbivorous animals, and one absent from the food of the carnivora, is that carbohydrate, the building material of all green food, *cellulose*, and there is some ground for thinking that the caecum is probably a region of special fermentive action upon it. The pancreatic juice, it may be noted, exercises a slight digestive activity upon this substance.

§ 33. Water is most largely absorbed in the large intestine, and in it the rejected (mainly insoluble) portion of the food gradually acquires its dark colour and other faecal characteristics.

III.—*The Circulation.*

§ 34. The next thing to consider is the distribution of the food material absorbed through the walls of the alimentary canal to the living and active parts of the body. This is one of the functions of the series of structures—heart and blood-vessels, called the circulation, circulatory system, or **vascular system**. It is not the only function. The blood also carries the oxygen from the lungs to the various parts where work is done and katabolism occurs, and it carries away the katabolism products to the points where they are excreted—the carbon dioxide and some water to the lungs, water and urea to the kidneys, sulphur compounds of some kind to the liver.

§ 35. The **blood** (Fig. 4, Sh. II.) is not homogeneous; under the low power of the microscope it may be seen to consist of—

- (i.) a clear fluid, the **plasma**, in which float—
- (ii.) a few transparent colourless bodies of *indefinite and changing shape*, and having a central brighter portion, the *nucleus* with a still brighter dot therein, the *nucleolus*—the **white corpuscles** (*w.c.*), and
- (iii.) flat round discs, *without a nucleus*, the **red corpuscles** (*r.c.*), greatly more numerous than the white.

§ 36. The chyle of the lacteals passes, as we have said, by the thoracic duct directly into the circulation. It enters the left *vena cava superior* (*l.v.c.s.*) near where this joins the *jugular vein* (*ex.j.*) (see Fig. 1, Sh. II., *th.d.*), and goes on at once with the rest of the blood to the heart. The small veins of the villi, however, which also help suck up the soluble nutritive material, are not directly continuous with the other body veins, the systemic veins; they belong to a special system, and, running together into larger and larger branches, form the *lienogastric* (*l.g.v.*) and *mesenteric* (*m.v.*) veins, which unite to form the **portal vein** (*p.v.*) which enters the liver (*lv.*) and there breaks up again into smaller and smaller

branches. The very finest ramifications of this spreading network are called the (liver) **capillaries**, and these again unite to form at last the **hepatic vein** (*h.v.*) which enters the **vena cava inferior** (*v.c.i.*), a median vessel, running directly to the heart. This capillary network in the liver is probably connected with changes requisite before the recently absorbed materials can enter the general blood current.

§ 37. The student has probably already heard the terms vein and artery employed. In the rabbit a vein is a vessel bringing blood towards the heart, while an artery is a vessel conducting it away. Veins are thin-walled, and therefore flabby, a conspicuous purple when full of blood, and when empty through bleeding and collapsed sometimes difficult to make out in dissection. They are formed by the union of lesser factors. The portal breaks up into lesser branches within the liver. Arteries have thick muscular and elastic walls, thick enough to prevent the blood showing through, and are therefore pale pink or white and keep their round shape.

§ 38. The **heart** of the rabbit is divided by partitions into four chambers: two upper thin-walled ones, the **auricles** (*au.*), and two lower ones, both, and especially the left, with very muscular walls, the **ventricles** (*vn.*). The right ventricle (*r.vn.*) and auricle (*r.au.*) communicate, and the left ventricle (*l.vn.*) and auricle (*l.au.*).

§ 39. The blood coming from all parts of the body, partly robbed of its oxygen and containing much carbon dioxide and other katastases, enters the right auricle of the heart through three great veins, the median vena cava inferior from the posterior parts of the body, and the paired venae cavae superiores from the anterior. With the beating of the heart, described below, it is forced into the *right ventricle* and from there through the *pulmonary artery* (*p.a.*), seen in the figure passing under the loop of the aorta (*ao.*), to the lungs.

§ 40. The **lungs** (*lg.* Fig. 1, Sh. I.) are moulded to the shape of the thoracic cavity and heart; they communicate with the pharynx by the *trachea* (*tr.* in Fig. 1, Sh. I.) or

windpipe, and are made up of a tissue of continually branching and diminishing air-tubes, which end at last in small air-sacs, the *alveoli*. The final branches of the pulmonary arteries, the lung capillaries, lie in the walls of these air-sacs, and are separated from the air by an extremely thin membrane through which the oxygen diffuses into, and the carbon dioxide escapes from, the blood.

§ 41. The mechanism of **respiration** will be understood by reference to Fig. 3, Sh. II. It will be noted in dissecting that the lungs have shrunk away from the walls of the thorax; this collapse occurs directly an aperture is made in the thorax wall, and is in part due to their extreme *elasticity*. In life the cavity of the thorax forms an air-tight box, between which and the lungs is a slight space, the *pleural cavity (pl.c.)*, lined by a moist membrane, which is also reflected over the lungs. The thorax wall is muscular and bony, and resists the atmospheric pressure on its outer side, so that the lungs before this is cut through are kept distended to the size of the thoracic cavity by the pressure of the air within them. In **inspiration** (or breathing-in) the ribs are raised by the external intercostal (Anglicé, *between-ribs, e.i.c.m.*) and other allied muscles, and the diaphragm (*dia.*) contracts and becomes *flatter*; the air is consequently sucked in as the lungs follow the movement of the thorax wall. In **expiration** the intercostals and diaphragm relax and allow the elastic recoil of the lungs to come into play. The thoracic wall is simultaneously depressed by the muscles of the abdominal area, the diaphragm thrust forwards, as the result of the displacement and compression of the alimentary viscera thus brought about. (*r.r.r.* in the Figure mark ribs.)

§ 42. The oxygen and carbon dioxide are not carried in exactly the same way by the blood. The student will know from his chemical reading that neither of these gases is very soluble, but carbon dioxide is sufficiently so in an alkaline fluid to be conveyed by the liquid plasma. The oxygen, however, needs a special portative mechanism in the colouring matter of the red corpuscles, the **haemoglobin**, with which it combines weakly to form *oxy-haemoglobin* of a bright red

colour, and decomposing easily in the capillaries (the finest vessels between the arteries and veins), to release the oxygen again. The same compound occurs in all true vertebrata, and in the blood-fluid of the worm; in the crayfish a similar substance, *haemocyanin*, which when oxygenated is blue, and when deoxydized colourless, discharges the same function.

§ 43. The blood returns from the lungs to the *left auricle* (*l.au.*) by the pulmonary veins, hidden in the Figure by the heart, passes thence to the thick-walled *left ventricle* (*l.vn.*), and on into the *aorta* (*ao.*).

§ 44. The beating of the heart is, of course, a succession of contractions and expansions of its muscular wall. The contraction, or **systole**, commences at the base of the venae cavae and passes to the auricles, driving the blood before it into the ventricles, which then contract sharply and drive it on into the aorta or pulmonary artery; a pause and then a dilatation, the **diastole**, follows. The flow of the blood is determined in one direction by the various valves of the heart. No valves occur in the opening of the superior cavae but an imperfect one, the Eustachian valve, protects the inferior cava; the direction of the heart's contraction prevents any excessive back-flow into the veins, and the onward tendency is encouraged by the suck of the diastole of the ventricles. Between the left ventricle and auricle is a valve made up of two flaps of skin, the **mitral valve**, the edges of the flaps being connected with the walls of the ventricle through the intermediation of small muscular threads, the *chordae tendinae*, which stretch across its cavity to little muscular pillars, the *papillary muscles*; these attachments prevent the mitral valve from flapping back into the auricle, and as the blood flows into and accumulates in the ventricle it gets behind the flaps of the valve and presses its edges together. When the systole of the ventricle occurs, the increased tension of the blood only closes the aperture the tighter, and the current passes on into the aorta, where we find three watch-pocket valves, with the pocket turned away from the heart, which are also closed and tightened by an attempt at regurgitation (back-

flow). A similar process occurs on the right side of the heart, but here, instead of a mitral valve of two flaps between auricle and ventricle, we have a **tricuspid valve** with three. The thickness of the muscular walls, in view of the lesser distance through which it has to force the blood, is less for the right ventricle than the left.

§ 45. The following are the **chief branches of the aorta**. The student should be able to follow them with certainty in dissection; they are all displayed in the Figure; but it must not be imagined for a moment that familiarity with this diagram will obviate the necessity for the practical work; *in.* is the innominate artery; it forks into *s.cl.a.*, the right subclavian, and *r.c.c.*, the right common carotid. Each carotid splits at the angle of the jaw into an internal and an external branch. The left common carotid, *l.c.c.*, arises from the base of the innominate; *l.s.cl.a.*, the left subclavian directly from the aorta. The aorta now curves round to the dorsal middle line, and runs down as seen in Figure 1 (Sh. I.) (*d.a.o.*) and Figure 1 (Sh. II.) (*d.a.o.*). Small branches are given off to the ribs, and then come the median *coeliac* (*coe.a.*) to the stomach and spleen, the median superior mesenteric (*s.mes.a.*) to the main portion of the intestine, and the inferior mesenteric (*p.m.a.*) to the rectum. Note that no veins to the inferior vena cava correspond to these arteries—the blood they supply going back by the portal vein (*p.v.*). The paired renal arteries (*r.a.*) supply the kidneys, and the common iliaes (*c.il.a.*) the hind legs, splitting into the internal iliaes (*i.il.a.*) and the femoral (*f.*). The student should note that the only arteries in the middle line are those supplying the alimentary canal.

§ 46. The distribution of the **veins** of the rabbit has only a superficial parallelism with arteries. The chief factors of vena cava inferior are the hepatic vein (*h.v.*), which receives the liver blood, the renal veins (*r.v.*) from the kidneys, the ilaeo-lumbar from the abdominal wall, and the external (*e.il.v.*) and internal iliaes (*i.il.v.*); with the exception of the renal veins none of these run side by side with arteries.

The superior cavae (*r.* and *l.v.c.s.*) are formed by the union of internal (*i.j.*) and external jugular (*e.j.*) veins with a subclavian (*s.cl.v.*) from the fore limb. The term *pre-caval vein* is sometimes used for superior cava. The attention of the student is called to the small *azygos vein* (*az.*) running into the right vena cava superior, and forming the only asymmetrical (not-balancing) feature of the veins in front of the heart; it brings blood back from the ribs of the thorax wall, and is of interest mainly because it answers to an enormous main vessel, the right post-cardinal sinus, in fishes. There are spermatic arteries and veins (*s.v.* and *a.*) to the genital organs. All these vessels should be patiently dissected out by the student, and drawn.

§ 47. Between the final branches of the arteries and the first fine factors of the veins, and joining them, come the **systemic capillaries**. These smallest and ultimate ramifications of the circulation penetrate every living part of the animal, so that if we could isolate the vascular system we should have the complete form of the rabbit in a closely-meshed network. It is in the capillaries that the exchange of gases occurs and that nutritive material passes out to the tissues and katastases in from them; they are the essential factor in the circulatory system of the mammal—veins, arteries, and heart simply exist to remove and replace their contents. The details of the branching of the pulmonary artery and the pulmonary veins need not detain us now.

§ 48. Summarising the course of the circulation, starting from the right ventricle, we have—pulmonary artery, pulmonary capillaries, pulmonary vein, left auricle, left ventricle, aorta, arteries, and systemic capillaries. After this, from all parts except the spleen and alimentary canal, the blood returns to systemic veins, superior or inferior cava, right auricle, and right ventricle. The blood from the stomach, spleen, and intestines, however, passes *via* the portal vein to the liver capillaries and then through the hepatic vein to inferior cava, and so on. Material leaves the blood to be excreted in lungs, kidneys, by the skin (as perspiration), and elsewhere. New material enters most conspicuously (*a*) by the portal veins and (*b*) by the thoracic duct and left superior cava.

§ 49. The following table summarises what we have learnt up to the present of the physiology of the Rabbit, considered as a mechanism using up food and oxygen and disengaging energy:—

AIR	{ Nitrogen returned unchanged.				
	{ Oxygen through Pulmonary Vein to—				
FOOD	{ Carbo-Hydrates { Starch, Sugar, Cellulose. Sugar.	{ Chyle in Lacteals going <i>via</i> Thoracic Duct and Left Superior Cava to ———	{ Left side of heart; whence to Systemic Arteries and Capillaries.	{ Urea	{ (? Liver) Kidney and Sweat Glands.
	{ Fat (little in Rabbit). { Glycerine, and fatty acids in soaps.	{ Veins of Villi—Portal Vein.—LIVER.—Hepatic Vein and Inferior Cava to—	{ H ₂ O	{ Lungs, Kidney, Sweat Glands.	
					{ Rejected matter got rid of in Defaecation.
			{ The tissues and KATABOLY.		

SHEET II.

Figure 1. The Rabbit's Circulation (see footnote to § 45).

(Throughout *l.* indicates left, *r.* right. Vessels without *r.* or *l.* prefixed are median.)

ao. a., aortic arch.
au, auricle.
az. v. (*p. c.* in Fig. 2), azygos vein.
c. c., common carotid.
c. il. a. common il. artery.
coe. a., coeliac artery.
d. ao., dorsal aorta.
e. il. v., external iliac vein.
f., femoral artery.
e. ju., external jugular vein.
h. v., hepatic vein.
inn., innominate artery.
in. j., internal jugular vein.
i. il. v., internal iliac vein.
i. il. a., internal iliac artery.
k., kidney.
lv., liver.
l. g. v., lienogastric vein (portal).

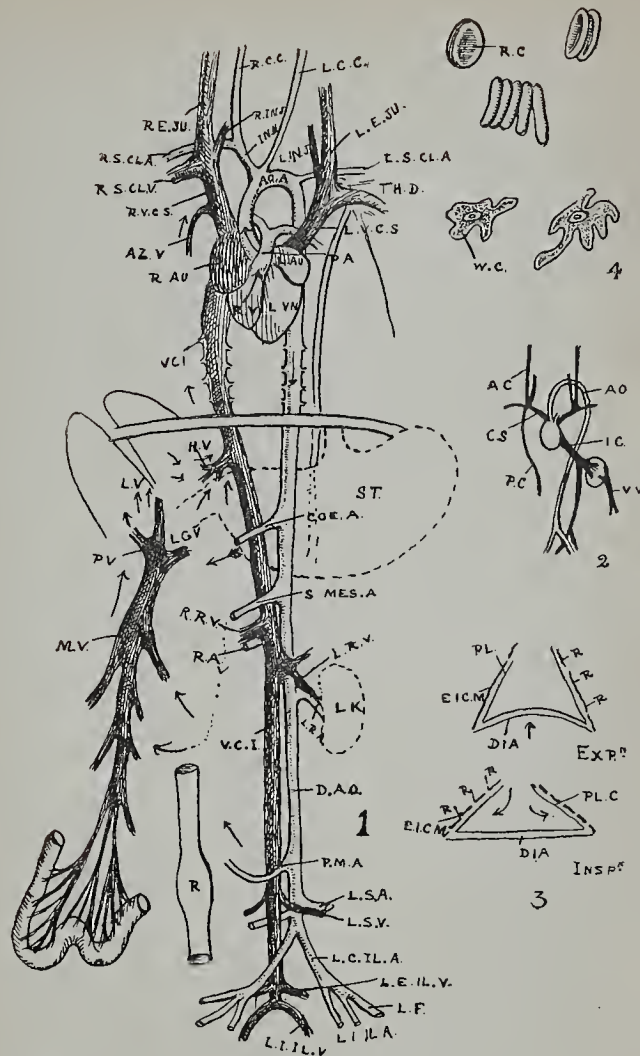
m. v., mesenteric vein (portal system).
p. m. a., posterior mesenteric artery.
p. v., main portal vein.
p. a., pulmonary artery.
r., rectum.
r. v., renal vein.
r. a., renal artery.
s. v. § a., spermatic (or ovarian) vein and artery (to genital organ).
s. mes. a., superior mesenteric artery.
s. cl. a., subclavian artery.
s. cl. v., subclavian vein.
v. c. s., vena cava superior.
v. c. i., vena cava inferior.
v. or *vn.*, ventricle.

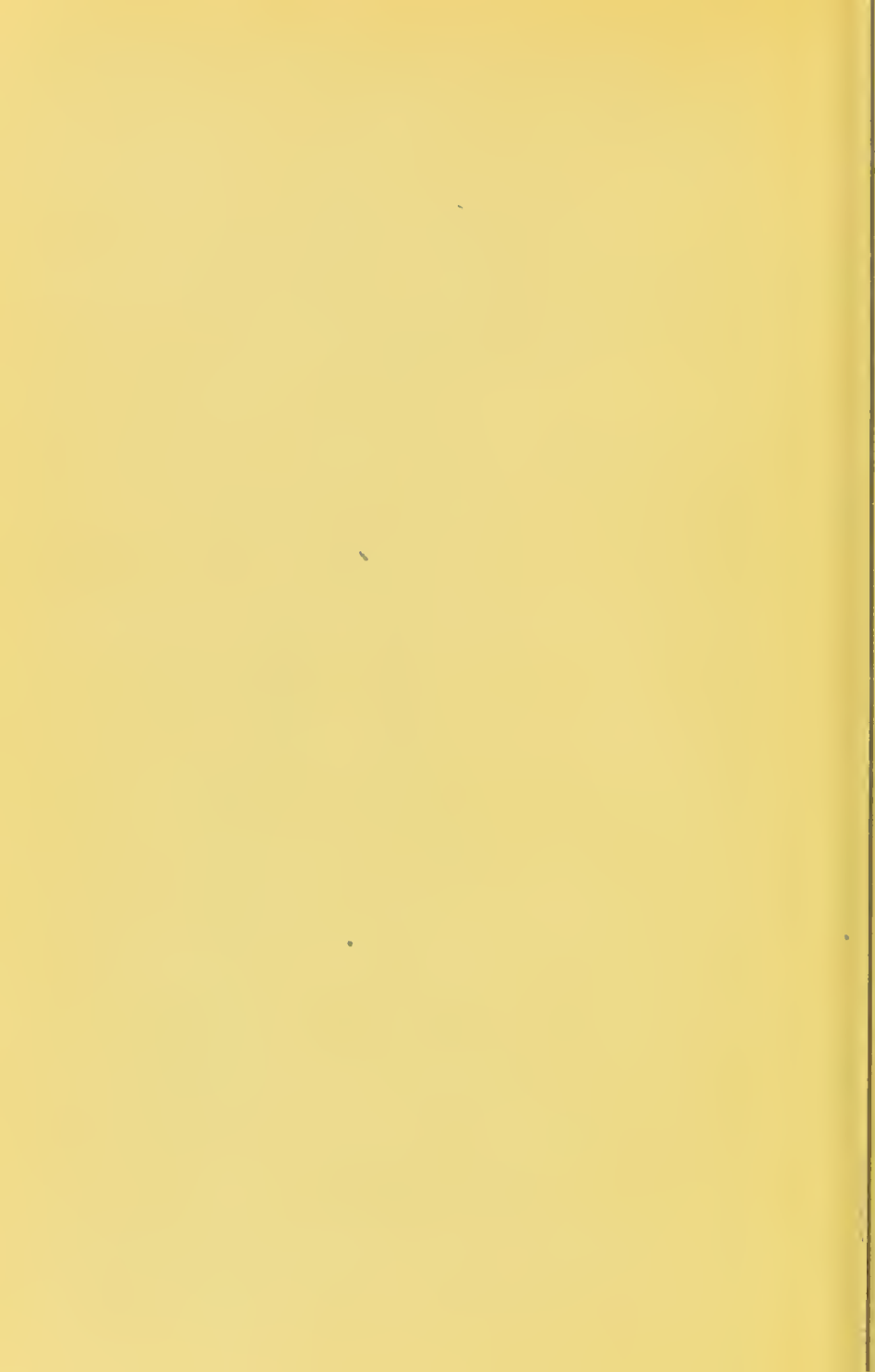
Figure 2. Figure of Circulation (simplified) illustrating certain points in development to be referred to later.

Figure 3. Respiration. See text, § 41.

Figure 4. Blood. See text, § 35.

To face page 18.





IV. *The Amoeba, Cells, and Tissue.*

§ 50. We have thus seen how the nutritive material is taken into the animal's system and distributed over its body, and, incidentally, we have noted how the resultant products of the creature's activity are removed. The essence of the whole process, as we have already stated, is the decomposition and partial oxydation of certain complex chemical compounds to water, carbon dioxide, a low nitrogenous body, which finally takes the form of urea, and other substances. We may now go on to a more detailed study, the microscopic study, or *histology*, of the tissues in which metaboly and kataboly occur, but before we do this it will be convenient to glance for a moment at another of our animal types—the **Amoeba**, the lowest, as the rabbit is the highest, in our series.

§ 51. This is shown in Fig. III., Sh. III., as it would appear under the low power of the microscope. We have a mass of a clear, transparent, greyish substance called protoplasm, granular in places, and with a clearer border; within this is a denser portion called the **nucleus**, or *endoplast* (*n.*), which, under the microscope, by transmitted light, appear brighter, and within that, a still denser spot, the **nucleolus** (*ns.*) or *endoplastule*. The protoplasm is more or less extensively excavated by fluid spaces, *vacuoles*; one clearer circular space or vacuole, which is invariably present, appears at intervals, enlarges gradually, and then vanishes abruptly, to reappear after a brief interval; this is called the **contractile vacuole** (*c.v.*). The amoeba is constantly changing its shape, whence its older name of the *Proteus animalcule*, thrusting out masses of its substance in one direction, and withdrawing from another, and hence slowly creeping about. These thrust-out parts, in its outline, are called **pseudopodia** (*ps.*). By means of them it gradually creeps round and encloses its food. Little particles of nutritive matter are usually to be detected in the homogeneous protoplasm of its

body ; commonly these are surrounded by a drop of water taken in with them, and the drop of water is then called a **food vacuole**. The process of taking in food is called *ingestion*. The amoeba, in all probability, performs essentially the same chemical process as we have summarised in §§ 10, 11, 12 ; it *ingests* food, digests it in the food vacuoles and builds it up into its body protoplasm, to undergo kataboly and furnish the force of its motion—the contractile vacuole, is probably respiratory and perhaps excretory, accumulating, and then, by its “systole” (*cp.* § 44), forcing out of its body, the water, carbon dioxide, urea, and other katabolites, which are formed concomitantly with its life activity. The amoeba reproduces itself in the simplest way ; the nucleus occasionally divides into two portions, and a widening fissure in the protoplasm of the animal’s body separates one from the other. It is impossible to say that one is the parent cell, and the other the offspring ; the amoeba, we merely perceive, *was* one and is now two. It is curious to note, therefore, that the amoeba is, in a sense, immortal—that the living nucleus of one of these minute creatures that we examine to-day under a microscope may have conceivably drawn out an unbroken thread of life since the remotest epochs of the world’s history. Although no sexual intercourse can be observed, there is reason to believe that a process of supposed “cannibalism,” in which a larger amoeba may occasionally engulf a smaller one, is really a conjugative reproductive process, and followed by increased vitality and division.

§ 52. Now, if the student will compare § 35, he will see that in the white blood corpuscles we have a very remarkable resemblance to the amoeba ; the contractile vacuole is absent, but we have the protoplasmic body, the nucleus and nucleolus, and those creeping fluctuations of shape through the thrusting out and withdrawal of pseudopodia, which constitute “amoeboid” motion. They also multiply, in the same way, by division.

§ 53. It is not only in the white corpuscle of the blood that we find this resemblance ; in all the firmer parts of the body we find, on microscopic examination, similar little blebs

of protoplasm, and at an early stage of development the young rabbit is simply *one mass of these protoplasmic bodies*. Their division and multiplication is an essential condition of growth. Through an unfortunate accident, these protoplasmic blebs, which constitute the living basis of the animal body, have come to be styled "**cells**," though the term "*corpuscles*" is far more appropriate.

§ 54. The word "cell" suggests something enclosed by firm and definite walls, and it was first employed in vegetable histology. Unlike the typical cells of animals, the cells of most plants are not naked protoplasm, but protoplasm enclosed in a wall of substance (cell wall) called *cellulose*. The presence of this cellulose cell wall, and the consequent necessity of feeding entirely upon liquids and gases that soak through it instead of being able to *ingest* a portion of solid food is, indeed, the **primary distinction between the vegetable and the animal kingdoms**, as ordinarily considered.

§ 55. Throughout life, millions of these cells retain their primary characters, and constitute the white corpuscles of blood, "phagocytes," and connective tissue corpuscles; others, again, engage in the formation of material round themselves, and lie, in such cases, as gristle and bone, embedded in the substance they have formed; others, again, undergo great changes in form and internal structure, and become permanently modified into, for instance, nerve fibres and muscle substance. The various substances arising in this way through the activity of cells are called **tissues**, the building materials of that complex thing, the animal body. Since such a creature as the rabbit is formed through the co-operation of a vast multitude of cells, it is called *multicellular*; the amoeba, on the other hand, is *unicellular*. The rabbit may be thus regarded as a vast community of amoeboid creatures and their products.

§ 56. Fig. 4, Sh. III. represents, diagrammatically, **embryonic tissue**, of which, to begin with, the whole animal consists. The cells are all living, capable of dividing, and similar, but as development proceeds, they *differentiate*, some

take on one kind of duty (*function*), and some another, like boys taking to different trades on leaving school, and wide differences in structure and interdependence become apparent.

§ 57. It is convenient to divide tissues into three classes, though the divisions are by no means clearly marked, nor have they any scientific value. The first of these comprises tissues composed wholly, or with the exception of an almost imperceptible cementing substance, of cells; the second division includes the skeletal tissues, the tissue of mesentery, and the connective and basement tissue of most of the organs, tissues which, generally speaking, consist of a *matrix*, or embedding substance, formed by the cells and outside of them, as well as the cells themselves; and, thirdly, muscular and nervous tissue. We shall study the former two in this chapter, and defer the third division until later.

§ 58. The outer layer of the skin (the *epidermis*), the inmost lining of the alimentary canal, the lining of the body cavity, and the inner linings of bloodvessels, glands, and various ducts constitute our first division. The general name for such tissues is **epithelium**. When the cells are more or less flattened, they form *squamous epithelium* (VI.), such as we find lining the inside of a man's cheek (from which the cells *sq. ep.* were taken) or covering the mesentery of various types—*sq. end.* are from the mesentery (§ 14) of a frog. A short cylindroidal form of cell makes up *columnar epithelium*, seen typically in the cells covering the villi of the duodenum (Fig. V.). This epithelium of the villi has the outer border curiously striated, and this is usually spoken of as leading towards "ciliated" epithelium, to be described immediately. The epithelium of the epidermis is stratified—that is to say, has many thicknesses of cells; the deeper layers are alive and dividing (*stratum mucosum*), while the more superficial are increasingly flattened and drier as the surface is approached (*stratum corneum*) and are continually being rubbed off and replaced from below.

§ 59. In the branching air-tubes of the lung, the central canal of the spinal cord, and in the ureters of the rabbit, and

in most other types, in various organs, we find **ciliated epithelium** (Fig.VII.). This is columnar or cubical in form, and with the free edge curiously modified and beset with a number of hair-like processes, the *cilia*, by which, during the life of the cell, a waving motion is sustained in one direction. This motion assists in maintaining a current in the contents of ducts which are lined with this tissue. The motion is independent of the general life of the animal, so long as the constituent cell still lives, and so it is easy for the student to witness it himself with a microscope having a $\frac{1}{4}$ -in. or $\frac{1}{6}$ -in. objective. Very fine cilia may be seen by gently scraping the roof of a frog's mouth (the cells figured are from this source), or the gill of a recently killed mussel, and mounting at once in water, or, better, in a very weak solution of common salt.

§ 60. The lining of **glands** is **secretory epithelium**; the cells are usually cubical or polygonal (8, *g.ep.*), and they display in the most characteristic form what is called *metabolism*. Anaboly (see § 14) we have defined as a chemical change in an upward direction—less stable and more complex compounds are built up in the processes of vegetable and animal activity towards protoplasm; kataboly is a chemical running down; *metaboly* is a more general term, covering all vital chemical changes. The products of the action of a glandular epithelium are metabolic products; material derived from the blood is worked up within the cell, not necessarily with conspicuous gain or loss of energy, and discharged into the gland space. The most striking case of this action is in the “**goblet cells**” that are found among the villi; these are simply glands of one cell, *unicellular* glands, and in Figure V. we see three stages in their action: at *g.c.*₁ material (secretion) is seen forming in the cell, at *g.c.*₂ it approaches the outer border, and at *g.c.*₃ it has been discharged, leaving a hollowed cell. Usually, however, the escape of secreted matter is not so conspicuous, and the gland-cells are collected as the lining of pits, simple, as in the gastric, pyloric, and Lieberkuhnian glands (Figure VIII., §§ 23, 29), or branching like a tree or a bunch of grapes (Fig. *r.g.*), as in Brunner's glands (§ 29), the pancreas, and the salivary glands. The salivary glands, we may mention,

are a pair internal to the posterior ventral angle of the jaw, the *sub-maxillary*; a pair anterior to these, the *sub-lingual*; a pair posterior to the jaw beneath the ear, the *parotid*, and a pair beneath the eye, the *infra orbital*.

§ 61. The **liver** is the most complicated gland in the body (Fig. X.). The bile duct (*b.d.*) branches again and again, and ends at last in the final pits, the lobuli (*lb.*), which are lined with secretory epithelium, and tightly packed, and squeeze each other into polygonal forms. The blood supply from which the bile would appear to be mainly extracted is brought by the portal vein, but this blood is altogether unfit for the *nutrition* of the liver tissue; for this latter purpose a branch of the coeliac artery, the hepatic, serves. Hence, in the tissue of the liver we have, branching and interweaving among the lobuli, the small branches of the bile duct (*b.d.*), which carries away the bile formed, the portal vein (*p.v.*), the hepatic artery (*h.a.*), and the hepatic vein (*h.v.*). (Compare § 45.) Figure X.*b.* shows a lobule; the portal vein and the artery ramify round the lobules—are *inter-lobular*, that is (*inter*, between); the hepatic vein begins in the middle of the lobules (*intra-lobular*), and receives their blood. (Compare X.*a.*) Besides its function in the manufacture of the excretory, digestive, and auxiliary bile, the liver performs other duties. It appears to act as an inspector of the assimilatory material brought in by the portal vein. The villi, for instance, will absorb arsenic, but this is arrested and thrown down in the liver. A third function is the formation of what would seem to be a store of carbo-hydrate, **glycogen**, mainly, it would appear, from the sugar in the portal vein, though also, very probably, from nitrogenous material, though this may occur only under exceptional conditions. Finally, the nitrogenous katabases, formed in the working of muscle and nerve, and returned by them to the blood for excretion, are not at that stage in the form of urea. Whatever form they assume, they undergo a further metabolism into urea before leaving the body, and the presence of considerable quantities of this latter substance in the liver suggests this as a fourth function of this organ—the elaboration of urea.

SHEET III.

HISTOLOGICAL FIGURES, I.

III. An amoeba.—*n.*, nucleus. *ns.*, nucleolus. *c. v.*, contractile vacuole.

IV. Embryonic tissue from the blastoderm of a chick.

V. Columnar epithelium.—*g. c. 1*, *g. c. 2*, *g. c. 3*, successive phases in the development of a goblet cell.

VI. *sq. ep.*, squamous epithelium (from the mucous membrane within the cheek). *sq. end.*, squamous endothelium from the mesentery. *st.* are openings (stomata) communicating between the lymphatics in the mesentery and the peritoneal (coelomic) space. *g. end.* is germinating endothelium; the cells divide and apparently drop off to become white corpuscles in the lymph current.

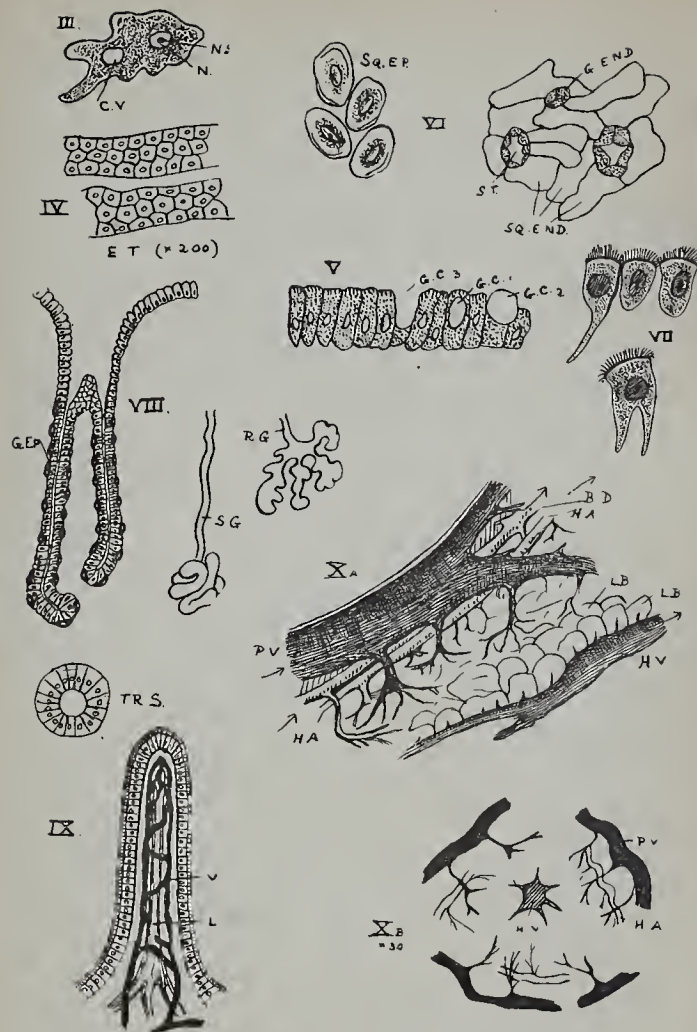
VII. Ciliated epithelium from the roof of the frog's mouth.

VIII. Forms of glands.—*g. ep.* is a gastric gland from the stomach; *trs.*, below, is cross section. This is one of the simplest types of gland. *s. g.*, a sweat gland, is also a simple tube, but convoluted below. *r. g.* is a racemose gland, such as the pancreas, Brunner's, or the salivary glands. The kidney, we shall see later, is simply an aggregate of branching tubuli (Sh. VII.).

IX. A duodenal villus.—*v.*, the vein. *lac.*, the lacteal.

X.a. Diagram of liver structure.—*lb. lb.*, lobuli. *p. v.*, the portal vein bringing blood, from which substances are to be elaborated, into the liver, and breaking up between the lobuli (inter-lobular). *h. a.*, the hepatic artery, bringing blood to oxygenate and nourish the liver tissue, and similarly distributed. *b. d.*, the inter-lobular bile duct. *h. v.*, the hepatic vein taking blood from the liver to the heart, its twigs commencing in the lobuli (intra-lobular).

X.b. A diagram of the appearance of an injected liver lobule as seen in section under the microscope.





§ 62. Similar, from a physiological point of view, to the secretory glands which form the digestive fluids are those which furnish lubricating fluids, the lachrymal gland, and Harderian glands in the orbit internally to the eye, and posterior and anterior to it respectively, the sebaceous glands (oil glands) connected with the hair, and the anal and perineal glands. The secretions of excretory glands are removed from the body; chief among them are the sweat glands and kidneys. The sweat glands are microscopic tubular glands, terminating internally in a small coil (Fig. VIII., *s.g.*), and are scattered thickly over the body, the water of their secretion being constantly removed by evaporation, and the small percentage of salt and urea remaining to accumulate as dirt, and the chief reasonable excuse for washing. The kidney structure is shown diagrammatically in Fig. 5, Sh. VII. A great number of branching and straight looped *tubuli* (little tubes) converge on an open space, the *pelvis*. Towards the outer layers (cortex) of the kidney, these tubuli terminate in little dilatations into which tangled knots of bloodvessels project: the dilatations are called Bowman's capsules (*B.c.*), and each coil of bloodvessel a glomerulus (*gl.*). In the capsules, water is drained from the blood; in the tubuli, urea and other salts in the urine are *secreted* from a branching network of vessels.

§ 63. In all the epithelial tissues that we have considered we have one feature in common: they are cells, each equivalent to the amoeba, that have taken on special duties—in a word, they are specialists. The amoeba is Jack of all trades and a free lance; the protective epidermal cell, the current-making ciliated cell, the bile or urea-making secretory cell is master of one trade, and a soldier in a vast and wonderfully organized host. We will now consider our second kind of cell in this organization, the cell of which the especial aim is the building round it of a tissue.

§ 64. The simplest variety in this group is **hyaline** (*i.e.* glassy) **cartilage** (gristle). In this the formative cells (the cartilage corpuscles) are enjellied in a clear structureless matrix (Fig. XII.), consisting entirely of organic compounds

accumulated by their activity. Immediately round the cell lies a *capsule* of newer material. Some of the cells have recently divided (1); others have done so less recently, and there has been time for the interpolation of matrix, as at 2. In this way the tissue grows and is repaired. A thin layer of connective tissue (see below), the *perichondrium*, clothes the cartilaginous structure.

§ 65. **Connective tissue** (Fig. XIII.) is a general name for a group of tissues of very variable character. It is usually described as consisting typically in the mammals of three chief elements felted together; of comparatively unmodified corpuscles (*c.c.*), more or less amoeboid, and of fibres which are elongated, altered, and distorted cells. The fibres are of two kinds: yellow, branching, and highly *elastic* (*y.e.f.*), in consequence of which they fall into sinuous lines in a preparation, and white and *inelastic* ones (*w.i.f.*), lying in parallel bundles. Where the latter element is entirely dominant, the connective tissue is **tendon**, found especially at the point of attachment of muscles to the parts they work. Some elastic ligaments are almost purely yellow fibrous tissue. A loose interweaving of the three elements is **areolar tissue**, the chief fabric of mesentery, membrane, and the *dermis* (beneath the epidermis). With muscle it is the material of the walls of the alimentary canal and bloodvessels, and generally it enters into, binds together, and holds in place other tissue. The connective tissue of fishes displays the differentiation of fibres in a far less distinct manner.

§ 66. Through connective tissues wander the **phagocytes**, cells that are difficult to distinguish, if really distinct, from the white blood corpuscles. These cells possess a remarkable freedom; they show an initiative of their own, and seem endowed with a subordinate individuality. They occur in great numbers in a tissue called **botryoidal tissue** (Fig. XIV.), which occurs especially in masses and patches along the course of the alimentary canal, in its walls. The tonsils, swellings on either side of the throat, are such masses, and aggregates occur as visible patches, the Peyer's patches, on the ileum. It also constitutes the mass of the vermiform

appendix and the wall of the *sacculus rotundus*; and in the young animal the "*thymus gland*," ventral to the heart, and, less entirely, the "*thyroid gland*," ventral to the larynx, are similar structures, which are reduced or disappear as development proceeds. It is evident that in these two latter cases the term "gland" is somewhat of a misnomer. The matrix of botryoidal tissue is a network of stretched and hollowed connective tissue cells—it is not a secretion, as cartilage matrix appears to be. During digestion, the phagocytes prowl into the intestine, and ingest and devour *bacteria*, that might otherwise give rise to disease. In inflammation, we may note here, they converge from all directions upon the point wounded or irritated. They appear to be the active agents in all processes of absorption (see *osteoclasts* under *bone*), and, for instance, migrate into and devour the tissues of the tadpole's tail, during its metamorphosis to the adult frog.

§ 67. Within the connective tissue cells **fat** drops may be formed, as in Figure XV. *Adipose tissue* is simply connective tissue loaded with fat-distended cells. The tissue is, of course, a store form of hydro-carbon (§ 17), provided against the possible misadventure of starvation. With the exception of some hibernating animals, such store forms would seem to be of accidental importance only among animals, whereas among plants they are of invariable and necessary occurrence.

§ 68. We now come to **Bone**, a tissue confined to the vertebrata, and typically shown only in the higher types. As we descend in the scale from birds and mammals to lizards, amphibia (frogs and toads) and fish, we find cartilage continually more important, and the bony constituent of the skeleton correspondingly less so. In such a type as the dog-fish, the skeleton is entirely cartilaginous, bone only occurs in connection with the animal's scales; it must have been in connection with scales that bone first appeared in the vertebrate sub-kingdom. In the frog we have a cartilaginous skeleton *overlaid* by numerous bony scutes (shield-like plates) which, when the student comes to study that type, he will perceive are equivalent to the bony parts of such scales as occur in the dog-fish, sunk inward, and plating over the cartilage; and

in the frog the cartilage also is itself, in a few places, replaced by bony tissue. In the adult rabbit these two kinds of bone, the bone *overlying* what was originally cartilage (**membrane bone**), and the bone replacing the cartilage (**cartilage bone**) have, between them, practically superseded the cartilage altogether. The structure of the most characteristic kind of bone will be understood by reference to Fig. XVI. It is a simplified diagram of the transverse section of such a bone as the thigh bone. *M.C.* is the central marrow cavity, *H.v.*, *H.v.* are cross sections of small bloodvessels, the Haversian vessels running more or less longitudinally through the bone in canals, the Haversian canals. Arranged round these vessels are circles of the formative elements, the bone corpuscles or *osteoblasts* (*b.c.*) each embedded in bony matrix in a little bed, the *lacuna*, and communicating one with another by fine processes through *canaliculi* in the matrix, which processes are only to be seen clearly in decalcified bone.* The osteoblasts are arranged in concentric series, and the matrix is therefore in concentric layers, or *lamellae* (*c.l.*). Without and within the zone of Haversian systems are (*o.l.* and *i.l.*), the outer and inner lamellae. The bone is surrounded by connective tissue, the *periosteum*. In addition to this *compact bone*, there is a lighter and looser variety in which spicules and bars of bony tissue are loosely interwoven. Many flat bones, the bones of the skull, for instance, consist of this **spongy bone**, plated (as an electro spoon is plated) with compact bone.

§ 69. Among the bony bars and spicules of **spongy bone** occurs the red marrow—which must not be confused with the yellow marrow, the fatty substance in the central cavity of long bones. In this red marrow are numerous large colourless cells, which appear to form within their substance and then liberate red blood corpuscles. This occurs especially in the spongy bone within the ribs.

§ 70. *The matrix of bone differs from that of cartilage or of most other tissues in consisting chiefly of *inorganic* salts. The chief of these is calcium phosphate, with which much smaller quantities of calcium carbonate, and magnesium

phosphate and carbonate occur. These inorganic salts can be removed by immersion of the bone in weak hydrochloric acid, and a flexible network of connecting tissue, Haversian vessels, bone corpuscles, and their processes remains. This is *decalcified bone* alluded to above.

§ 71. In the very young rabbit, the limb bones, vertebral column, and many of the skull bones are simply plates and bars of cartilage; the future membrane bones, however, are planned out in connective tissue. The **development** of the latter is simple, the connective tissue corpuscles functioning by a simple change of product as osteoblasts. The development of the cartilage bones, however, is more complicated. Figure XVII., represents, in a diagrammatic way, the stages in the conversion of a cartilaginous bar to bone. To begin with, the previously sporadically-arranged (scattered anyhow) corpuscles (*u.c.c.*) are gathered into groups in single file, or, in other words, into "columnar" groups (as at *c.c.*). The matrix becomes clouded with inorganic salts of lime, and it is then said to be *calcified*. This calcified cartilage then undergoes absorption—it must not be imagined for a moment that bone is calcified cartilage. Simultaneous with the formation of the cavities (*s*) due to this absorption, connective tissue (*p.c.i.*) from the surrounding perichondrium (*p.c.*) grows into the ossifying* bar. It is from this connective tissue that the osteoblasts (*o.b.*) arise, and bone is built up. Throughout life a bone is continually being absorbed and reformed by the activity of the osteoblasts. An osteoblast engaged in the absorption instead of the formation of bone is called an *osteoclast*.

§ 72. The great thing to notice about this is that cartilage does not become bone, but is eaten into and ousted by it; the osteoblasts and osteoclasts replace entirely the cartilage corpuscles, and are not derived from them.

§ 73. We may mention here the structure of the **spleen**

* The formation of bone is called *ossification*. To ossify is to become bony.

(Fig. 1, *p.* 6). It consists of a connective tissue and muscular coating, with an internal soft matrix much resembling botryoidal tissue, traversed by fibrous *trabeculae* (= beams, planks) containing blood-vessels, and the whole organ is gorged with blood, particularly after meals. The consideration of its function the student may conveniently defer for the present.

§ 74. Here, also, we may notice the **lymphatics**, a series of small vessels which return the overflow of the blood serum from the capillaries, in the nutrition of the tissues in all parts of the body, to the thoracic duct (see § 36), and the general circulation. At intervals their course is interrupted by gland-like dilatations, the *lymphatic glands*, in which masses of rapidly dividing and growing (proliferating) cells occur, of which, doubtless, many are detached and become, first "*lymph corpuscles*," and, when they reach the veins, white blood corpuscles.

SHEET IV.

HISTOLOGICAL DIAGRAMS, II.

XI. A blood capillary. White corpuscles are migrating through the walls into the tissues (cp. § 66.).

XII. Hyaline cartilage (§ 64).

XIII. *c. c.*, connective tissue corpuscle. *y. e. f.*, yellow elastic fibres. *w. i. f.*, white inelastic fibres.

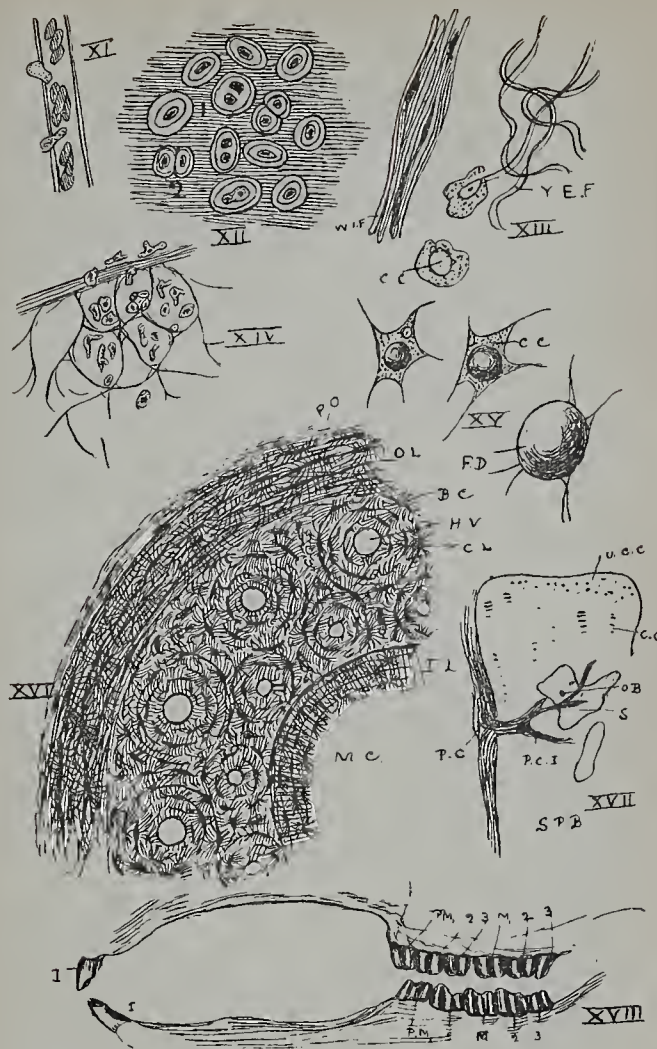
XIV. Botryoidal tissue (§ 66).

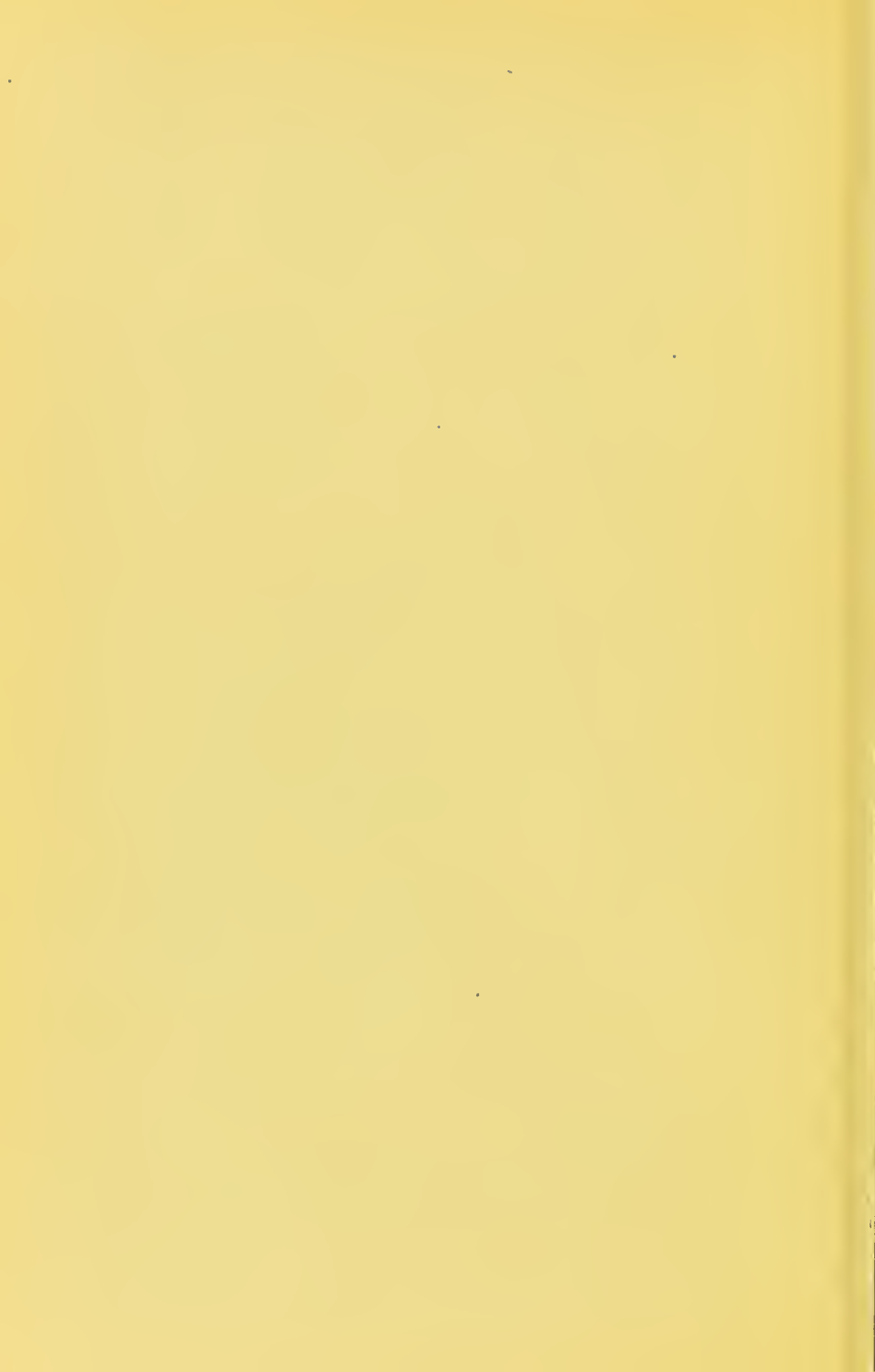
XV. Development of a fat drop. — *f. d.*, in a connective tissue corpuscle *c. c.*, in the formation of adipose tissue (§ 67).

XVI. Diagrammatic cross section of a long bone. — *p. o.*, periosteum. *o. l.*, outer lamellae. *b. c.*, bone corpuscle in a lacuna. *H. v.*, Haversian vessel (in the Haversian canal) surrounded by concentric lamellae of bone, *c. l.*, and, together with these and zones of bone corpuscles, called a Haversian system. *i. l.*, inner lamellae. *m. c.*, medullary canal full of yellow marrow.

XVII. To illustrate bone development (§ 71).

XVIII. Dentition of rabbit, i_1^2 , c_0^0 , pm_2^3 , m_3^3 .





V.—*The Skeleton.*

§ 75. We are now in a position to study the rabbit's skeleton. We strongly recommend the student to do this with the actual bones at hand—they may be cleared very easily in a well-boiled rabbit. This recommendation may appear superfluous to some readers, but, as a matter of fact, the marked proclivity of the average schoolmaster for mere book-work has put such a stamp on study, that, in nine cases out of ten, a student, unless he is expressly instructed to the contrary, will go to the tortuous, and possibly inexact, descriptions of a book for a knowledge of things that lie at his very finger-tips. We have not written this chapter to give a complete knowledge of the skeleton, but simply as an aid in the actual examination of the bones.

§ 76. We may take the skeleton under five headings. There is the central axis, the chain of little bones, the vertebrae, threaded on the spinal cord (see Fig. 1 and § 1); the thorax, the box enclosed by ribs and sternum; the fore-limb and bones connected with it (pectoral girdle and limb), and the hind-limb and bones connected with it (pelvic girdle). Finally, there is the skull, but, following the London University syllabus, we shall substitute the skull of the dog for that of the rabbit, as more typically mammalian (§ 4).

§ 77. In § 3 (which the student should refer to) we have a division of the vertebrae into four varieties. Of these the most representative is the thoracic. A **thoracic vertebra** (Fig. 4, Sh. V., *T. V.*) consists of a central bony mass, the *body* or *centrum* (*b.*), from which there arises dorsally an arch, the neural arch (*n.a.*), completed by a keystone, the neural spine (*n.s.*); and coming off laterally from the arch is the transverse process (*tr.p.*). Looking at the vertebra sideways, we see that the arch is notched for the exit of nerves. Jointed to the thoracic vertebrae on either side are the ribs (*r.*).

Each rib has a process, the *tuberculum*, going up to articulate with the transverse process, and one, the *capitulum*, articulating between the bodies of two contiguous vertebrae. The facets for the articulation of the capitulum are indicated in the side view by shading. At either end of the body of a vertebra of a young rabbit are bony caps, the **epiphyses** (*ep.*), separated from the body by a plane of unossified cartilage (indicated by the dots). These epiphyses to the vertebral bodies occur only among mammals, and are even absent in some cases within the class. In the adult rabbit they have ossified continuously with the rest of the body.

§ 78. A **cervical vertebra** (*C.V.*) seems, upon cursory inspection, to have no rib. The transverse processes differ from those of the thoracic series in having a perforation, the *vertebrarterial canal*, through which the vertebral artery runs up the neck. A study of the development of these bones shows that the part marked *f.r.* ossifies separately from the rest of the transverse process; and the form of the equivalent structures in certain peculiar lower mammals and in reptiles leaves no doubt that *f.r.* is really an abbreviated rib, fused up with the transverse process and body. The two anterior cervical vertebrae are peculiar. The first (*at.*) is called the *Atlas*—the figure shows the anterior view—and has great articular faces for the condyles (§ 86) of the skull, and a deficient centrum. The next is the axis, and it is distinguished by an *odontoid peg* (*od.p.*), which fits into the space where the body of the atlas is deficient. In development the centrum of the axis ossifies from one centre, and the odontoid peg from another, which at that time occupies the position of centrum of the atlas. So that it would seem that the atlas is a vertebra *minus* a centrum, and the axis is a vertebra *plus* a centrum, added at the expense of the atlas.

§ 79. The **lumbar vertebrae** (*l.v.*) are larger, and have eight transverse processes, each giving rise to an ascending limb, the *metapophyses*, and a descending one. The latter (generally spoken of as the transverse processes) point steeply downward, and are considerably longer than those of the thoracic series. The **sacral vertebrae** (*s.v.*) have great

flattened transverse processes for articulation with the ilia. The **caudal vertebrae** (*c.v.*) are gradually reduced to the mere elongated centra, as we proceed towards the tip of the tail.

§ 80. All the vertebrae join with their adjacent fellows through the intermediation of certain *intervertebral pads*, and also articulate by small processes at either end at the upper side of the arch, the *zygapophyses*. The normals to the polished facets of these point, in the case of the anterior *zygapophyses*, up and in (*mnemonic: ant-up-in*), and in the case of the posterior, down and out. The student should make this, and the other features of vertebrae, out upon actual specimens.

§ 81. The **thorax** is bounded dorsally by the vertebral column, and ventrally by the sternum. The sternum consists of segments, the *sternebrae* (*st.*); anteriorly there is a bony *manubrium* (*mb.*), posteriorly a thin cartilaginous plate, the *xiphisternum* (*xi.*). Seven pairs of ribs articulate by cartilaginous ends (sternal ribs) with the sternum directly, as indicated in the figure; five (false) ribs are joined to each other and to the seventh, and not to the sternum directly. The last four ribs have no tuberculum (§ 77).

§ 82. The fore-limb (**pectoral limb**) consists of an upper arm bone, the *humerus* (*hum.*), the distal end of which is deeply excavated by the olecranon fossa (*o.f.*), as indicated by the dotted lines; of two bones, the ulna (*u.*) and radius (*r.*), which are firmly bound by ligament in the position of the figure (*i.e.*, with the palm of the hand downward, "prone"); of a number of small bones (carpalia), the *carpus* (*c.*); of a series of *metacarpals* (*mc.*); and of three digits (= fingers), each, except the first, or *pollex*, of three small bones—the *phalanges*, only the proximal of which appear in the figure. The ulna has a hook-like head, the *olecranon* (*o.*), which distinguishes it easily from the distally thickened radius. The limb is attached to the body through the intermediation of the shoulder-blade (*scapula*, *sc.*), a flattened bone with a median external ridge with a hook-like termination, the *acromion* (*acr.*). There is also a process overhanging the *glenoid cavity*

(*g.*), wherein the humerus articulates, which process is called *coracoid* (*co.*); it is ossified from two separate centres, and represents a very considerable bone in the bird, reptile, and frog. Along the dorsal edge of the scapula of the rabbit is unossified cartilage, which is called the *supra-scapula* (*s.sc.*). In man there runs from the acromion to the manubrium of the sternum a bone, the collar-bone or *clavicle*. This is represented by a very imperfectly ossified rudiment in the rabbit. The scapula and clavicle, the bones of the body connected with the fore-limb, are frequently styled the **pectoral girdle**, or *shoulder-girdle*; this name of girdle will appear less of a misnomer when lower vertebrate types are studied.

§ 83. The hind limb and its body bones—**pelvic limb and girdle**—are shown in Fig. 2. The limb skeleton corresponds closely with that of the fore-limb. The *femur* (*fe.*) answers to the *humerus*, and is to be distinguished from it by the greater distinctness of its proximal head (*hd.*), and by the absence of an olecranon fossa from its distal end. The *tibia* (*ti* = the *radius*) is fused for the distal half of its length with the *fibula* (*fb.* = *ulna*). A *tarsus* (*tarsalia*) equals the *carpus*.* Two of the proximal tarsalia may be noted: one, working like a pulley under the tibia, is the *astragalus* (*as.*); one, forming the bony support of the heel, is the *calcaneum* (*ca*). There is a series of metatarsals, and then come four digits of three phalanges each.

§ 84. The pelvic girdle differs from the pectoral in most land vertebrata in being *articulated with the vertebral column*. This difference does not exist in fishes. It consists in the

* Such a resemblance as exists between one vertebra and another in the rabbit, or between the humerus and femur, is called *serial homology*; the two things correspond with each other to the extent of imperfect reduplication. "Homology" simply is commonly used to indicate the resemblance between any two structures in different animals, in origin and position as regards other parts. Thus, the heart of the rabbit and of the frog are homologous structures, corresponding in position, and resembling each other much as two memory sketches of one picture might do.

SHEET V.

DIAGRAM OF THE RABBIT'S BONES.

To be compared with the real things.

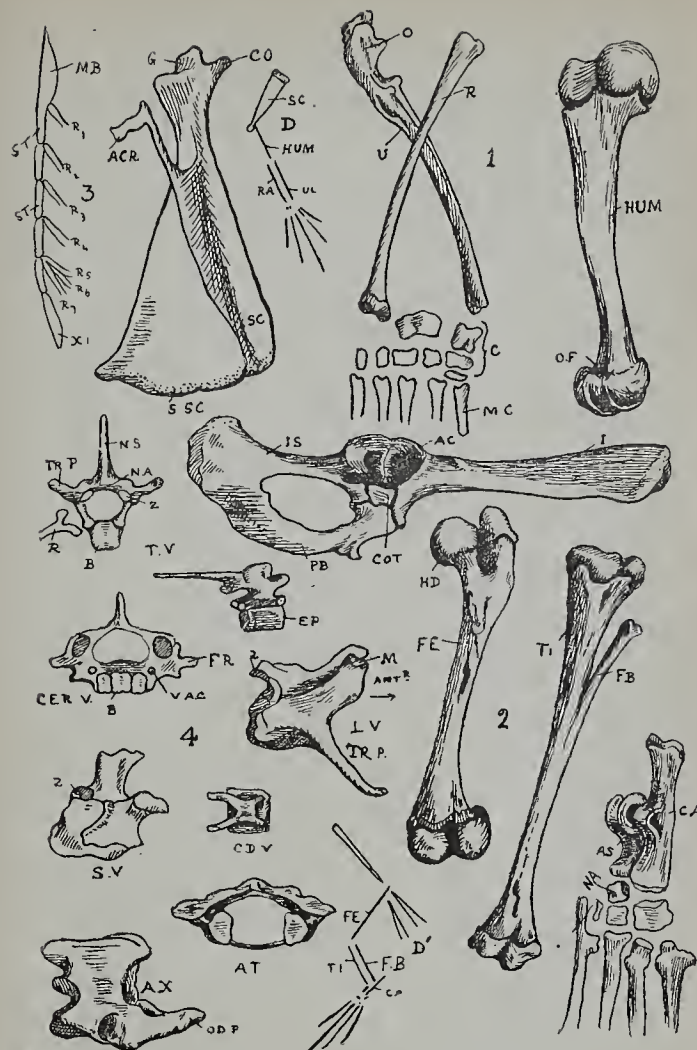
D and D' show the fore and hind limbs, to illustrate their homology. D is in the embryonic position. The radius and tibia are, at an early stage in development, on the anterior edge of their respective limbs; the ulna and fibula, posterior; the former are spoken of as *preaxial* in position, the latter as *postaxial*. But in the adult the humerus is twisted so that the proximal end of the radius lies at the outer side of the elbow, whence it crosses the ulna, so that its distal end is inside, while the femur is also twisted round, so that the entire tibia is internal.

Figures 1 and 2. LIMBS.—*ac.*, acetabulum. *ocr.*, acromion. *as.*, astragalus. *c.*, carpus. *ca.*, calcaneum. *co.*, coracoid. *coty.*, cotyloid bone. *fb.*, fibula. *fe.*, femur. *g.*, glenoid cavity (for head of humerus). *hd.*, head of femur. *hum.*, humerus. *i.*, ilium. *is.*, ischium. *m.c.*, meta-carpals. *na.*, navicular. *o.*, olecranon process of ulna. *o.f.*, olecranon fossa. *pb.*, puhis. *r.*, radius. *u.*, ulna.

Figure 3. STERNUM.—*Mb.*, manubrium. *st.*, sternebrae. *r₁*, *r₂*, &c., sternal ribs. *Xi.*, Xiphisternum.

Figure 4. VERTEBRAE.—*At.*, Atlas. *Ax.*, axis. *b.*, centrum. *C.V.*, caudal vertebra. *CER.V.*, cervical vertebra. *ep.*, epiphysis. *f.r.*, fused rib (in cervical vertebrae). *L.V.*, Lumbar vertebra. *m.*, metapophysis (of lumbar vertebra). *n.a.*, neural arch. *n.s.*, neural spine. *r.*, rib. *S.V.*, sacral vertebra. *T.V.*, Thoracic vertebra. *tr.p.*, transverse process. *v.a.c.*, vertebralarterial canal. *z.*, zygapophysis.

To face page 34.



SHEET V.

rabbit of four bones; the ilium (*i.*), the ischium (*is.*), the pubis (*pb.*), and the small cotyloid bone—the first two and the latter one meeting in the acetabular fossa (*ac.*), in which the head of the femur works. The pubes and ischia are fused along the mid-ventral line. Many morphologists regard the ilium as equivalent to, that is, strictly corresponding in its relation to the scapula, the pubis to the cartilaginous substratum of the clavicle, and the ischium to the coracoid.

§ 85. These bones will be studied at the greatest advantage when dissected out from a boiled rabbit. Prepared and wired skeletons, disarticulated skeletons, plates of figures, and written descriptions are in succession more tedious and less satisfactory ways to a real comprehension of this matter. This chapter directs the student's attention to the most important points in the study of the skeleton, but it is in no way intended to mitigate the necessity of practical work. It is a guide simply.

§ 86. The mammalian skull will be better understood after the study of that of some lower vertebrate. We shall describe its main features now, but their meaning will be much clearer after the lower type is read. Our figures are of *Canis*. In section (Fig. 4, Sh. VI.), we perceive a brain case (*cranium*) opening behind by a large aperture, the *foramen magnum* (*F.M.*). In front of this is an extensive passage, the *nasal passage* (*E.N.* to *P.N.*), which is divided from the mouth by a bony floor, the *palate*, and which opens into the pharynx behind at the *posterior nares* (*P.N.*), and to the exterior by the anterior or *external nares* (*E.N.*). It is divided into right and left passages by a middle partition, the nasal septum. Outside the skull, on its wings, is a flask-like bone, the *bulla tympani* (*b.* in Figs. 2 and 3), protecting the middle ear, and from above this there passes an arch, the cheek bone (*ju.* in Figs. 1, 2, and 3), to the upper jaw, forming in front the bony lower protection of the cavity containing the eye, the *orbit*. The cheek arch, nasal passage, and jaws, form collectively the "facial apparatus," as distinguished from the cranium, and the whole skull is sometimes referred to as the "cranio-facial apparatus." Two eminences for articulation

with the atlas vertebra, the *condyles* (*c.*), lie one on each side of the lower boundary of the foramen magnum.

§ 87. The floor of the **cranium** consists of a series of cartilage bones, the *basi-occipital* (*b.o.*), *basi-sphenoid* (*b.sp.*), *pre-sphenoid* (*p.sp.*), and in front, the *ethmoid* (*eth.*), which sends down a median plate, not shown in the figure, to form the nasal septum between right and left nasal passages. Like extended wings on either side of the basi-occipital are the *ex-occipital* (*e.o.*) (the bone is marked in Fig. 4, but the letters are a little obscured by shading). Similarly, the *ali-sphenoids* (*a.s.*), are wings to the *basi-*, and the *orbito-sphenoids* (*o.s.*), to the *pre-sphenoid* bone (*p.sp.*). Between the ex-occipital and ali-sphenoid there is wedged in a bone, the *periotic* (*p.o.*), containing the internal ear (§ 115). Above the foramen magnum the median supra-occipital bone completes what is called the occipital arch. A pair of *parietals* (*pa.*) come above the ali-sphenoids, and a pair of *frontals* (*f.*), above the orbito sphenoids. At the side the brain case is still incomplete, and here the squamosal (*sq.*) enters into its wall. In the external view (Fig. 3) the bulla hides the periotic bone from without. The student should examine all four figures for these bones before proceeding.

§ 88. The outer edge of the **upper jaw** and the cheek arch are made up of three paired bones. First comes the premaxilla (*p.m.*) (not *p.m.*₁, or *p.m.*₄), containing, in the dog, the three incisors of either side. Then comes the maxilla, bearing the rest of the teeth.* The *jugal*, or malar (*ju.*), reaches over from the maxilla to meet a *zygomatic process* (= connecting outgrowth) (*z.p.*) of the squamosal bone.

§ 89. In the under view of the skull (Fig. 2) it will be seen that the maxilla sends in a plate to form the front part of the **hard palate**. Behind, the hard palate is completed by the pair of palatine bones (*pal.*), which conceal much of the pre- and orbito- sphenoid in the ventral view, and which run

* In the dog a sabre-like canine (*c.*), four pre-molars (*p.m.*₁ to *p.m.*₄) and two molars (*m.*₁, *m.*₂).

back as ridges to terminate in two small angular bones, the pterygoids (*pt.*), which we shall find represent much more important structures in the lower vertebrata.

§ 90. The pre-maxillae and maxillae bound the sides of the **nasal passage**, and it is completed above by a pair of splints, the nasals. Along the floor of the nasal passage, on the middle line, lies a splint of bone formed by the coalescence of two halves. It embraces in a V-like groove the mesethmoid (nasal septum) above, and lies on the palate. In the frog it is represented by two laterally situated bones. This is the *vomer* bone (*vo.*). The nasal passages are partially blocked by foliated bony outgrowths from the inner aspect of their walls, which in life are covered with mucous membrane, and increase the surface sensitive to smell. The ethmoid sends in the *ethmo-turbinal* (*e.t.*); the nasal, the *naso-turbinal* (*n.t.*); and the maxilla, the *maxillo-turbinal* (*m.t.*). In the anterior corner of the orbit there is a bone, the *lachrymal* (*lc.*, Fig. 1), which is hidden by the maxilla in the side view of the skull.

§ 91. The **lower jaw** (*mandible*) is one continuous bone in the mammal. Three incisors bite against the three of the upper jaw. Then come a canine, four premolars, and *three* molars, the first of which is blade-like (*sectorial tooth*), and bites against the similar sectorial tooth (last premolar) of the upper jaw. The third molar is small. The arrangement of teeth is indicated in the following dental formula:—

$$\text{I. } \frac{3.3}{3.3}, \quad \text{C. } \frac{1.1}{1.1}, \quad \text{P.M. } \frac{4.4}{4.4}, \quad \text{M. } \frac{2.2}{3.3}.$$

§ 92. Attached just behind the bulla above, and passing round on either side of the throat to meet at the base of the tongue, is the **hyoid apparatus** (Fig. 6). The stylohyal (*s.h.*), epihyal (*e.h.*), and ceratohyal (*c.h.*) form the anterior cornu of the hyoid. The *body of the hyoid* (*b.h.*) forms a basis for the tongue. The posterior cornua (*t.h.*) of the hyoid are also called the thyrohyals.

§ 93. The following table presents these bones in something like their relative positions. A closer approximation to the state of the case will be reached if the student will imagine the maxilla raised up so as to overlie and hide the palatine and presphenoid, the squamosal similarly overlying the periotic bone, and the jugal reaching between them. Membrane bones are distinguished by capital letters.

CRANIUM.

NASAL (paired)	FRONTAL (paired)	PARIETAL (paired)	<i>Supra-occipital</i> (median)
<i>Ethmoid Bone</i> (median)	LACHRYMAL (paired)		
	<i>Orbito-sphenoid</i> (paired)	<i>Ali-sphenoid</i> (paired)	<i>Ex-occipital</i> (paired)
	EYE	<i>Periotic Bone</i> (paired)	
	<i>Pre-sphenoid</i> (median)	<i>Basi-sphenoid</i> *	<i>Basi-occipital</i> (median)
VOMER			BULLA (paired)

UPPER JAW.

PRE-MAXILLA (paired)	<i>Palatine</i> (paired)	<i>Pterygoid</i> (paired)	
	MAXILLA (paired)	JUGAL (paired)	SQUAMOSAL (paired)

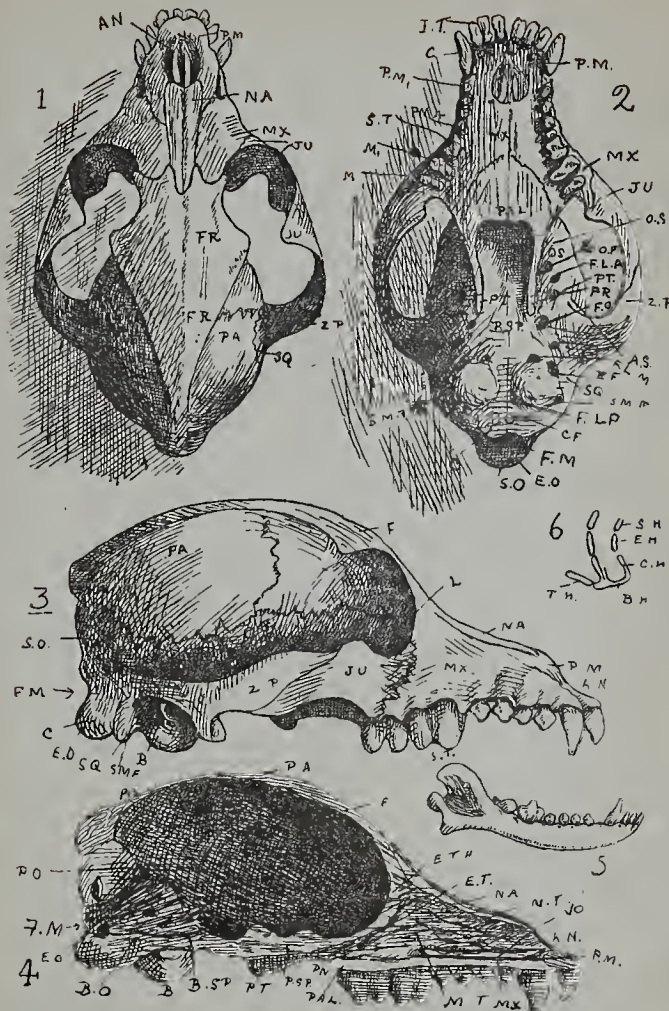
LOWER JAW.

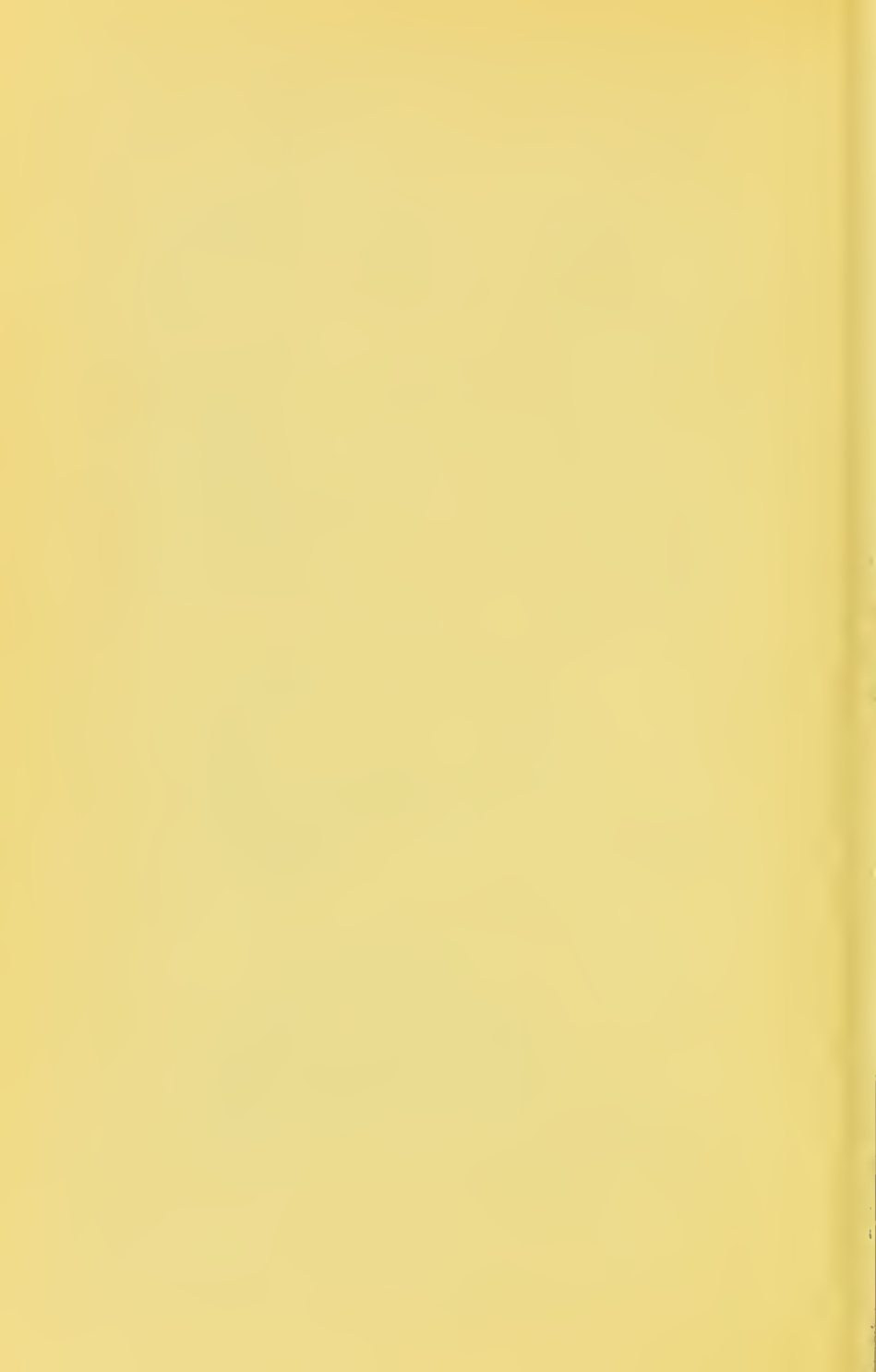
* In this table the small bones of the ear are simply indicated by an asterisk.

SHEET VI.

The Skull of *Canis*.—1. Dorsal. 2. Ventral. 3. Right Lateral Aspect. 4. Section a little to the left of the nasal septum. 5. Lower jaw (smaller). 6. Hyoid apparatus.

- | | |
|---|--|
| a. n., anterior nares. | m. t., maxillo-turbinal. |
| a. s., ali-sphenoid. | mx., maxilla. |
| b. h., body of the hyoid. | na., nasal. |
| b. o., basi-occipital. | n. t., naso-turbinal. |
| b. sp., basi-sphenoid. | o. f., optic foramen. |
| c., condyle of the skull. | o. s., orbito-sphenoid. |
| c. f., condylar foramen (for XII.). | pa., parietal. |
| c. h., cerato-hyal. | pal., palatine. |
| E. f., Eustachian foramen. | p. m., pre-maxilla. |
| e. h., epihyal. | p. m. ₁ , p. m. ₄ , premolars. |
| e. o., exoccipital. | p. n., posterior nares. |
| e. t., ethmo-turbinal. | p. sp., pre-sphenoid. |
| eth., ethmoid. | pt., pterygoid. |
| f., frontal. | s. h., stylo-hyal. |
| f. l. a., foramen lacerum anterius. | s. m. f., stylo-mastoid foramen (for VII.). |
| f. l. m., foramen lacerum medium. | s. o., supra-occipital. |
| f. l. p., foramen lacerum posterius (for IX., X., XI.). | sq., squamosal. |
| F. M., forameu magnum. | s. t., sectorial tooth. |
| f. o., foramen ovale. | t. h., thyro-hyal. |
| f. r., foramen rotundum. | vo., vomer. |
| ju., jugal. | z. p., zygomatic process of squamosal. |
| m., molars. | |





§ 94. Hidden by the bulla, and just external to the periotic bone, are the **auditory ossicles**, the *incus*, *malleus*, *os orbiculare*, and *stapes*. These will be more explicitly treated when we discuss the ear.

§ 95. When we come to the study of the nerves, we shall revert to the skull, and treat of its perforations. The student should not fail, before proceeding, to copy and recopy our figures, and to make himself quite familiar with them, and he should also obtain and handle an actual skull. For all practical purposes the skull of a sheep or cat will be almost as useful as that of the dog.

VI. *Muscle and Nerve.*

§ 96. We have, in the skeleton, a complicated apparatus of parts hinged and movable upon one another; the agent moving these parts is the same agent that we find in the heart walls propelling the blood through the circulation, in the alimentary canal squeezing the food along its course, and universally in the body where motion occurs, except in the case of the creeping phagocytes, and the ciliary waving of ciliated epithelium. This agent is **muscle**. We have, in muscular tissue, a very wide departure from the structure of the primordial cell; to use a common biological expression, a very great amount of *modification* (= differentiation). Sh. VII. represents the simpler kind of muscular tissue, **unstriated muscle**, in which the cell character is still fairly obvious. The cells are fusiform (spindle-shaped), have a distinct nucleus and faint longitudinal striations (striations along their *length*), but no transverse striations.

§ 97. In **striated muscle** extensive modifications mask the cell character. Under a $\frac{1}{4}$ in. objective, *transverse striations* of the fibres are also distinctly visible, and under a *much higher power* we discern in a fibre (Sh. VII.) transverse columns of rod-like sarcous elements (*s.e.*), the columns separated by lines of dots, the membranes of Krause (*k.m.*), and nuclei (*n.*), flattened and separated into portions, and lying, in some cases, close to the sarcolemma (*sc.*), the connective tissue enclosing the fibre, in others scattered throughout the substance of the fibre. The figure shows the fibre ruptured, in order to display the sarcolemma; *e.p.* is the end plate of a nerve (*n.v.*), and *fb.* are the fibrillae into which a fibre may be teased.

§ 98. In the heart we have an intermediate kind of muscle, **cardiac muscle** (Fig. 2), in which the muscle fibres *branch*; there is apparently no sarcolemma, and the undivided nuclei lie in the centre of the cell.

§ 99. Unstriated muscle is sometimes called *involuntary*, and striated, *voluntary* muscle; but there is really not the connexion with the will that these terms suggest. We have just mentioned that the heart-muscle is striated, but who can alter the beating of the heart by force of will? and the striated muscles of the limbs perform endless involuntary acts. It would seem that unstriated muscle contracts slowly, and we find it especially among the viscera; in the intestine, for instance, where it controls that "*peristaltic*" movement which pushes the food forward. Voluntary muscle, on the other hand, has a sharp contraction. The muscle of the slow-moving snails, slugs, and mussels is unstriated; all the muscle of the active insects and crustacea (crabs, lobsters, and crayfish) is striated. Still, if the student bears the exception of the heart in mind, and considers muscles as "*voluntary*" that his will can reach, the terms voluntary and involuntary will serve to give him an idea of the distribution of these two types of muscle in his own body, and in that of the rabbit.

§ 100. Muscular contraction, and generally all activity in the body is accompanied by kataboly. The medium by which these katabolic changes are set going and controlled is the **nervous system**. The nervous system holds the whole body together in one harmonious whole; it is the governing organization of the multicellular community (§ 55), and the supreme head of the government resides in the brain, and is called the mind. But just as in a political state only the most important and most exceptional duties are performed by the imperial body, and minor matters and questions of routine are referred to boards and local authorities, so the mind takes cognisance only of a few of the higher concerns of the animal, and a large amount of the work of the nervous system goes on insensibly, in a perfectly automatic way—even much that occurs in the brain.

§ 101. The **primary elements** in the tissue of the nervous system are three: *nerve fibres*, which are simply conducting threads, telegraph wires; *ganglion cells*, which are the officials of the system; and *neuroglia*, a fine variety of con-

nective tissue which holds these other elements together, and may also possibly exercise a function in affecting impressions. A message along a nerve to a ganglion cell is an *afferent impression*, from a cell to a muscle or other external end is an *efferent impression*. The passage of an impression may be defined as a flash of kataboly along the nerve, and so every feeling, thought, and determination involves the formation of a certain quantity of katastases, and the necessity for air and nutrition.

§ 102. Unlike telegraph wires, to which they are often compared, nervous fibres usually convey impressions only in one direction, either centrally (*afferent* or *sensory* nerve fibres), or outwardly (*efferent* or *motor* nerve fibres). But the so-called motor nerve fibres include not only those that set muscles in motion, but those that excite secretion, check impulsive movements, and govern nutrition.

§ 103. Fig. 7, Sh. VIII., shows the typical structure of nervous tissues. The nerve fibres there figured are bound together by *endoneurium* into small ropes, the nerves, encased in *perineurium*. There is always a grey axis cylinder (*a.c.*), which may (in *medullated* nerves), or may not (in *non-medullated* or *grey* nerves) have a medullary sheath (*s.S.*) interrupted at intervals by the nodes of Ranvier (*n.R.*). Nuclei (*n.*) at intervals under the sheath indicate the cells from which nerve fibres are derived by a process of elongation. The nerves of invertebrata, where they possess nerves, are mostly grey, and so are those of the sympathetic system of vertebrata, to be presently described. *g.c., g.c.* are ganglion cells; they may have many hair-like processes, usually running into continuity with the axis cylinders of nerve fibres, in which case they are called *multi-polar* cells, or they may be *uni-* or *bi-polar*.

§ 104. The simplest example of the action of the nervous system is **reflex action**. For instance, when the foot of a frog, or the hand of a soundly sleeping person, is tickled very gently, the limb is moved away from the irritation, without any mental action, and entirely without will being exercised. And when we go from light into darkness, the pupil of the

eye enlarges, without any direct consciousness of the change of its shape on our part. Similarly, the presence of food in the pharynx initiates a series of movements—swallowing, the digestive movements, and so on—which in health are entirely beyond our mental scope.

§ 105. A vast amount of our activities are reflex, and in such action an efferent stimulus follows an afferent promptly and quite mechanically. *It is only where efferent stimuli do not immediately become entirely transmuted into outwardly moving impulses that mental action comes in and an animal feels.* There appears to be a direct relation between sensation and motion. For instance, the shrieks and other instinctive violent motions produced by pain, “shunt off” a certain amount of nervous impression that would otherwise register itself as additional painful sensation. Similarly, most women and children understand the comfort of a “good cry,” and its benefit in shifting off a disagreeable mental state.

§ 106. The mind receives and stores impressions, and these accumulated experiences are the basis of memory, comparison, imagination, thought, and apparently spontaneous will. **Voluntary actions** differ from reflex by the interposition of this previously stored factor. For instance, when a frog sees a small object in front of him, that may or may not be an edible insect, the direct visual impression does not directly determine his subsequent action. It revives a number of previous experiences, an image already stored of similar insects, and associated with painful or pleasurable gustatory experiences. With these arise an emotional effect of desire or repulsion which passes into action of capture, or the reverse.

§ 107. Voluntary actions may, by constant repetition, become **quasi-reflex** in character. The intellectual phase is abbreviated away. *Habits* are once voluntary and deliberated actions becoming mechanical in this way, and slipping out of the sphere of mind. For instance, many of the detailed movements of writing and walking are performed without any

attention to the details. An excessive concentration of the attention upon one thing leads to absent-mindedness, and to its consequent absurdities of inappropriate, because imperfectly acquired, reflexes.

§ 108. This fluctuating scope of mind should be remembered, more especially when we are considering the probable mental states of the lower animals. An habitual or reflex action may have all the outward appearance of deliberate adjustment. We cannot tell in any particular case how far the mental comes in, or whether it comes in at all. Seeing that in our own case consciousness does not enter into our commonest and most necessary actions, into breathing and digestion, for instance, and scarcely at all into the *details* of such acts as walking and talking, we might infer that nature was economical in its use, and that in the case of such an animal as the Rabbit, which follows a very limited routine, and in which scarcely any versatility in emergencies is evident, it must be relatively inconsiderable. Perhaps, after all, pain is not scattered so needlessly and lavishly throughout the world as the enemies of the vivisectionist would have us believe.

VII.—*The Nervous System.*

§ 109. A little more attention must now be given to the detailed anatomy of the peripheral and central nerve ends. A nerve, as we have pointed out, terminates centrally in some ganglion cell, either in a ganglion or in the spinal cord or brain; peripherally there is a much greater variety of ending. We may have tactile (touch) ends of various kinds, and the similar olfactory and gustatory end organs; or the nerve may conduct efferent impressions, and terminate in a gland which it excites to secretion, in a muscle end-plate, or, in fact, anywhere where kataboly can be set going and energy disengaged. We may now briefly advert to the receptive nerve ends.

§ 110. Many sensory nerves, doubtless, terminate in fine ends among the tissues. There are also special **touch corpuscles**, ovoid bodies, around which a nerve twines, or within which it terminates.

§ 111. The **eye** (Fig. 8) has a tough, dense, outer coat, the *sclerotic* (*sc.*), within which is a highly vascular and internally pigmented layer, the *choroid*, upon which the percipient nervous layer, the *retina* (*r.*), rests. The chief chamber of the eye is filled with a transparent jelly, the vitreous humour (*v.h.*). In front of the eye, the white sclerotic passes into the transparent cornea (*c.*). The epidermis is continued over the outer face of this as a thin, transparent epithelium. The choroid coat is continued in front by a ring-shaped muscle, the iris (*ir.*), the coloured portion of the eyes. This iris enlarges or contracts its central aperture (the black *pupil*) by reflex action, as the amount of light diminishes or increases. Immediately behind this curtain is the *crystalline lens* (*l.*), the curvature of the anterior face of which is controlled by the *ciliary muscle* (*c.m.*). In front of the lens is the aqueous humour (*a.h.*). The description of the action of this apparatus involves the explanation of several of the elementary

principles of optics, and will be found by the student in any text-book of that subject. Here it would have no very instructive bearing either on general physiological considerations or upon anatomical fact.

§ 112. The structure of the **retina** demands fuller notice. Figure 9 shows an enlarged diagram of a small portion of this, the percipient part of the eye. The optic nerve (*o.n.* in Fig. 8) enters the eye at a spot called the *blind spot* (*B.S.*), and the nerve fibres spread thence over the inner retinal surface. From this layer of nerve fibres (*o.n.* in Fig. 9) threads run outward, through certain clear and granular layers, to an outermost stratum of little *rods* (*r.*) and fusiform bodies called *cones* (*c.*), lying side by side. The whole of the retina consists of quite transparent matter, and it is this outermost layer of rods and cones (*r.* and *c.*) that receives and records the visual impression. This turning of the recipient ends away from the light is hardly what one would at first expect—it seems such a roundabout arrangement—but it obtains in all vertebrata, and it is a striking point of comparison with the ordinary invertebrate eye.

§ 113. We may pause to call the student's attention to a little point in the physiology of nerves, very happily illustrated here. The function of a nerve *fibre* is the conduction of impressions pure and simple; the light radiates through the fibrous layer of the retina without producing the slightest impression, and at the blind spot, where the rods and cones are absent, and the nerve fibres are gathered together, no visual impressions are recorded. If there is any doubt as to the existence of a blind spot in the retinal picture, the proof is easy. Let the reader shut his left eye, and regard these two asterisks, fixing his gaze intently upon the left-hand one of them.

*

*

At a distance of three or four inches from the paper, both spots will be focussed on his retina, the left one in the centre of vision, and the right one at some spot internal to this, and

he will see them both distinctly. Now, if he withdraw his head slowly, the right spot will of course appear to approach the left, and at a distance of ten or twelve inches it will, in its approach, pass over the blind spot and vanish, to reappear as he continues to move his head away from the paper. The function of nerve fibres is simply conduction, and the nature of the impressions they convey is entirely determined by the nature of their distal and proximal terminations.

§ 114. Certain small muscles in the orbit (eye-socket) move the eye, and by their action contribute to our perception of the relative position of objects. There is a leash of four muscles rising from a spot behind the exit of the optic nerve from the cranium to the upper, under, anterior, and posterior sides of the eyeball. These are the *superior*, *inferior*, *anterior*, and *posterior recti*. Running from the front of the orbit obliquely to the underside of the eyeball is the *inferior oblique muscle*. Corresponding to it above is a *superior oblique*. A lachrymal gland lies in the postero-inferior angle of the orbit, and a Harderian gland in the corresponding position in front. In addition to the upper and lower eyelids of the human subject, the rabbit has a third, the *nictitating lid*, in the anterior corner of the eye.

§ 115. The **ear** (Sh. VII.) consists of an essential organ of hearing, and of certain superadded parts. The essential part is called the **internal ear**, and is represented in all the true vertebrata (*i.e.*, excluding the lancelet and its allies). In the lower forms it is a hollow membranous structure, embedded in a mass of cartilage, the otic capsule; in the mammal the latter is entirely ossified, to form the *periotic bone*. The internal ear consists of a central sac, from which three semicircular canals spring. The planes of the three canals are mutually at right angles; two are vertical, the anterior and posterior (*p.v.c.*) vertical canals, and one is horizontal, the horizontal canal (*h.c.*). There are dilatations, called *ampullae*, at the anterior base of the anterior, and at the posterior base of the posterior and horizontal canals. Indi-

rectly connected with the main sac is a spirally-twisted portion, resembling a snail shell in form, the *cochlea*. This last part is distinctive of the mammalia, but the rest of the internal ear is represented in all vertebrata, with one or two exceptions. The whole of the labyrinth is membranous, and contains a fluid, the *endolymph*; between the membranous wall of the labyrinth and the enclosing bone is a space containing the *perilymph*. Strange as it may appear at first, the entire lining of the internal ear is, at an early stage, continuous with the general epidermis of the animal. It grows in just as a gland might grow in, and is finally cut off from the exterior; but a considerable relic of this former communication remains as a thin, vertical blind tube (not shown in the figure), the *ductus endolymphaticus*.

§ 116. The eighth nerve runs from the brain case (*Cr.*) into the periotic bone, and is distributed to the several portions of this labyrinth. In an ordinary fish this internal ear is the sole auditory organ we should find; the sound-waves would travel through the water to the elastic cranium and so reach and affect the nerves. But in all air-frequenting animals this original plan of an ear has to be added to, to fit it to the much fainter sound vibrations of the compressible and far less elastic air. A "receiving apparatus" is needed, and is supplied by the ear-drum, middle ear, or tympanic cavity (*T.*). In the mammal there is also a collecting ear trumpet (the ear commonly so-called), the external ear, and *external auditory meatus* (*e.a.m.*). A tightly stretched membrane, the *tympanic membrane*, separates this from the drum. A chain of small bones, the malleus (*m.*), the incus (*i.*), the os orbiculare (*o.or.*), a very small bone, and a stirrup-shaped *stapes*, swing across the tympanum, from the tympanic membrane to the internal ear. At two points the bony investment of this last is incomplete—at the *fenestra rotunda* (*f.r.*), and at the *fenestra ovalis* (*f.o.*), into which latter the end of the stapes fits, and so communicates the sound vibrations of the tympanic membrane to the endolymph. A passage, the Eustachian tube, communicates between the tympanic cavity and the pharynx (*Ph.*), and serves to equalize the pressure on either side of the drum-head. A comparative

SHEET VII.

1. Striated muscle fibre (of the Rabbit), ruptured to show sarcolemma. *n.*, nucleus. *sc.*, sarcolemma. *K. m.*, membrane of Krause. *s. e.*, sarcous elements. *nv.*, nerve. *e. p.*, its end plate.

2. Cardiac muscle.

3. Unstriated muscle fibres.

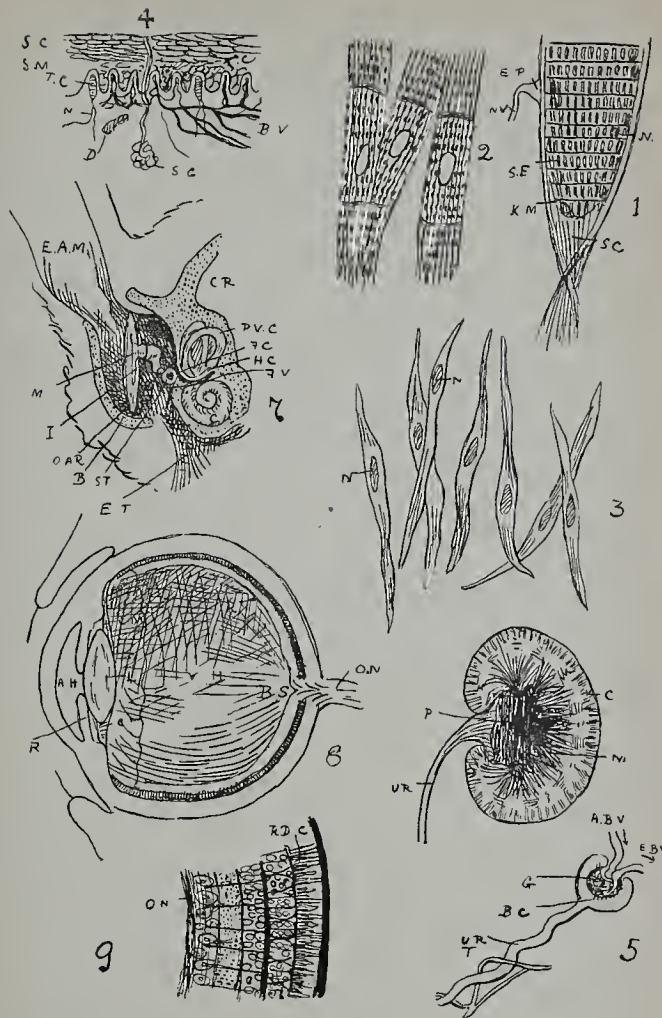
4. Diagram of the Skin.—*s. c.*, stratum corneum, and *s. m.*, stratum mucosum of the epidermis. *d.*, areolar tissue of the dermis (meso-blastic). *b. v.*, blood vessel. *s. g.*, sweat gland. *t. c.*, tactile corpuscle.

5. To illustrate Kidney structure.—*ur.*, ureter. *p.*, pelvis. *m.*, medulla. *c.*, cortex. *B. c.*, one of Bowman's capsules of the cortex; *ur. t.*, the uriniferous tubule running from it into the medulla, where it loops and branches; around it branches a blood-vessel. *g.*, glomerulus, a knot of blood-vessels in the capsule. *a. b. v.*, *e. b. v.*, afferent and efferent blood-vessels, of which the latter go to break up upon the tubuli. The water of the urine is probably filtered off in the capsule, the urea and other salts secreted by the tubuli.

7. The Auditory structures of the Rabbit (diagram). See text, § 115.

8. The Eye (diagram). See text, § 111.

9. The Retina (diagram). See text, § 112.





study of the ears of the vertebrata brings to light the fact that, as we descend in the animal scale, the four ear ossicles are replaced by large bones and cartilages connected with the jaw, and the drum and Eustachian tube by a gill slit. We have, in fact, in the ear, as the student will perceive in the sequel, an essentially *aquatic* auditory organ, added to and patched up to fit the new needs of a life out of water.

§ 117. The impressions of **smell** are conducted through the first nerve to the brain, and are first received by special hair-bearing cells in the olfactory mucous membrane of the upper part of the nasal passage. The sense of **taste** has a special nerve in the ninth, the fibres of which terminate in special cells and cell aggregates in the little papillae (velvet pile-like processes) that cover the tongue.

§ 118. At an early stage in development, the **brain** of a mammal consists of a linear arrangement of *three* hollow vesicles (Fig. 5, Sh. VIII., 1, 2, and 3), which are the fore-, mid-, and hind-brain respectively. The cavities in these vesicles are continuous with a hollow running through the spinal cord. On the dorsal side of the fore-brain is a structure to be dealt with more fully later, the *pineal gland* (*p.g.*), while on its under surface is the *pituitary body* (*pt.*).

§ 119. The lower figure of (5) shows, in a diagrammatic manner, the derivation of the adult brain from this primitive state. From the **fore-brain** vesicle a hollow outgrowth on either side gives rise to the (paired) *cerebral hemisphere* (*c.h.*), which is prolonged forward as the *olfactory lobe* (*o.l.*). From the fore-brain the retina of the eye and the optic nerve also originate as an, at first, hollow outgrowth (*op.*). The roof of the **mid-brain** is also thickened, and bulges up to form two pairs of thickenings, the *corpora quadrigemina*, (*c.q.*). The **hind-brain** sends up in front a median outgrowth, which develops lateral wings, the cerebellum (*cbm.*), behind which the remainder of the hind-brain is called the *medulla oblongata*, and passes without any very definite demarcation into the spinal cord.

§ 120. Fig. 1 is a corresponding figure of the actual state of affairs in the adult. The brain is seen in median vertical section. *ch.* is the right cerebral hemisphere, an inflated vesicle, which, in the mammal—but not in our lower types—reaches back over the rest of the fore-brain, and also over the mid-brain, and hides these and the pineal gland in the dorsal view of the brain (Fig. 2). The hollow of the hemisphere on either side communicates with the *third ventricle*, the original cavity of the **fore-brain** (1 in Fig. 5), by an aperture (the *foramen of Monro*), indicated by a black arrow (*f.M.*). Besides their original communication through the intermeditation of the fore-brain, the hemispheres are also united above its roof by a broad bridge of fibre, the *corpus callosum* (*c.c.*), which is distinctive of the mammalian animals. The original fore-brain vesicle has its lateral walls thickened to form the *optic thalami* (*o.th.*), between which a middle commissure, (*m.c.*), absent in lower types, stretches like a great beam across the third ventricle. The original fore-brain is often called the *thalamencephalon*, the hemisphere, the *prosencephalon*, the olfactory lobes, the *rhinencephalon*.

§ 121. The parts of **mid-brain** (mesencephalon) will be easily recognised. Its cavity is in the adult mammal called the *iter*; its floor is differentiated into bundles of fibres, the *crura cerebri* (*c. cb.*), figured also in Fig. 4.

§ 122. The cerebellum (*metencephalon*) consists of a central mass, the *vermis* (*v. cbm.*), and it also has *lateral lobes* (*l.l.*), prolonged into *flocculi* (*f.cbm.*), which last are bedded in pits in the periotic bone, and on that account render the extraction of the brain from the cranium far more difficult than it would otherwise be. The roof of the **hind-brain**, before and behind the cerebellum, consists of extremely thin plates of nervous matter. Its floor is greatly thickened to form the mass of the medulla, and in front a great transverse track of fibres is specialized, the *pons Varolii* (*p.V.*). Its cavity is called the *fourth ventricle*.

§ 123. Fig. 2 gives a dorsal view of the rabbit's brain; a horizontal slice has been taken at the level of the corpus

callosum. The *lateral ventricle* (i.e., the hollows of the hemisphere) is not yet opened. A lower cut (Fig. 3) exposes this (*V.L.*). The level of these slices is approximately indicated in Fig. 1 by the lines *A* and *B*. This latter figure will repay careful examination. The arrow, *ar.*, plunges into the third ventricle, behind the great *middle commissure* (*m.c.*), and the barb is supposed to lie under the roof of the mid-brain, the corpora quadrigemina (*c.q.*). The position of *ar.* is also indicated in Fig. 1. Before reading on, the beginner should stop a while here; he should carefully copy or trace our figures, and, putting the book aside, name the parts, and he should then recopy, on an enlarged scale, and finally draw from memory, correct, and again draw. By doing this before the brain is dissected a considerable saving of time is possible.

§ 124. Proceeding from the brain are twelve pairs of **cranial nerves**. From the fore-brain spring two pairs, which differ from the rest of the cranial nerves in being, first of all, *hollow* outgrowths of the brain—the others are from the beginning *solid*. The *first* nerve is the olfactory lobe, which sends numerous filaments through the ethmoid bone to the olfactory organ. The *second* is the optic nerve, the visual sensory nerve.

§ 125. The **mid-brain** gives rise to only one nerve, the *third*, which supplies all the small muscles of the eye (see § 114), except the superior oblique and external rectus.

§ 126. The remainder of the nerves spring from the **hind-brain**. The *fourth* pair supply the superior obliques, and the *sixth* the external recti; so that III., IV., and VI. are alike purely motor nerves, small and distributed to the orbit. The *fifth* nerve, the *trigeminal*, is a much larger and more important one; it is a mixed nerve, having three main branches, of which the first two are chiefly sensory, the third almost entirely motor; it lies deeply in the orbit. V_1 (see Sh. IX.) runs up over the recti behind the eyeball, it is the *ophthalmic* branch; V_2 , the *maxillary* branch, runs deeply under the eyeball and emerges in front of the malar, and V_3 ,

the mandibular branch, runs down on the *inner* side of the jawbone to the jaw muscles and tongue.

§ 127. If the student will now recur to the figures of the dog's skull (Sh. VI.), he will see certain apertures indicated in the cranial wall. Of these, *o.f.* is the *optic foramen* for the exit of nerve II., perforating the orbito-sphenoid. Behind this there comes an irregular aperture, *f.l.a.*, the *foramen lacerum anterius*, giving exit to III., IV., VI., and V₁. V₂ emerges from the *foramen rotundum*, and V₃ from the *foramen ovale*, two apertures uniting behind a bony screen.* Just in front of the bulla is a *foramen lacerum medium* (*f.l.M.*), through which no nerve passes.

§ 128. The *eighth* nerve (*auditory*) is purely sensory, the nerve of the special sense of hearing; it runs into the periotic bone, and breaks up on the labyrinth. The *seventh* nerve (*facial*) is almost entirely motor; it passes through the periotic anterior to VIII., and emerges by the *stylo-mastoid foramen* (*s.m.f.*) behind the bulla, to run outside the great jaw muscle across the cheek immediately under the skin (Fig. 1).

§ 129. The *ninth* (*glossopharyngeal*) nerve is chiefly sensory; it is the special nerve of *taste*, and is distributed to the tongue. The *tenth* nerve (*vagus*) arises by a number of roots, and passes out of the skull, together with IX. and XI., by the *foramen lacerum posterius* (*f.l.p.*). It is a conspicuous white nerve, and runs down the neck by the side of the common carotid artery. It sends a *superior laryngeal* branch (*Xa*) to the larynx. The left vagus passes ventral to the aortic arch, and sends a branch (*l.x.b.*) under this along the trachea to the larynx—the *recurrent laryngeal nerve*. The corresponding nerve on the right (*r.x.b.*) loops under the subclavian artery. The main vagus, after this branching, passes behind the heart to the oesophagus and along it to the stomach. XI., the *spinal accessory*, supplies certain of the neck nerves. XII.,

* In the rabbit's skull the *f.l. anterius*, the *foramen rotundum*, and *foramen ovale* are not distinct, and there are two condylar foramina instead of one, through each of which a moiety of XII. passes.

the *hypoglossal*, runs out of the skull by the condylar foramen (*c.f.*), is motor, crosses the roots of XI., X., and IX., passes *ventral* to the carotid, and breaks up among the muscles of the tongue and neck.

§ 130. Of the **functions** of the several parts of the brain there is still very considerable doubt. With disease or wilful destruction of the cerebral tissue the personal initiative is affected—the animal becomes more distinctly a mechanism; the cerebellum is probably concerned in the coordination of muscular movements; and the medulla is a centre for the higher and more complicated respiratory reflexes, yawning, coughing, and so on. The great majority of reflex actions centre, however, in the spinal cord, and do not affect the brain.

§ 131. A cross section of the **spinal cord** is shown in Fig. 6, Sh. VIII. It is a cylinder, almost bisected by a dorsal (*d.f.*) and a ventral (*v.f.*) fissure. Through its centre runs a central canal (*c.c.*), continuous with the brain ventricles, and lined by ciliated epithelium. The spinal cord consists of an outer portion, mainly of nervous fibres, the white matter, and of inner, *ganglionated*, and more highly vascular grey matter. (In the cerebrum the grey matter is external, and the white internal.) The cord, like the brain, is surrounded by a vascular fibrous investment, and protected from concussion by a serous fluid. The nerves which emerge from the vertebral column between the vertebrae, arise, unlike the cranial nerves, by two roots. The dorsal of these, the *sensory root* (*d.n.*), has a swelling upon it, the dorsal ganglion, and—by experiments upon living animals—has been shown to contain only afferent fibres; the ventral, the *motor root*, is without a ganglion, and entirely or mainly motor. The two unite outside the cord, and thereafter the spinal nerves are both sensory and motor.

§ 132. Besides the great mass of brain and spinal cord (*cerebro-spinal axis*), there is, on either side of the dorsal wall of the body cavity, a **sympathetic** nervous chain. The

nerve fibres of this system, like the nerve fibres of invertebrates, are non-medullated. It may be seen as a greyish thread running close by the common carotid in the neck (*sym.*, Fig. 1); it then runs over the heads of the ribs in the thorax and close beside the dorsal aorta in the abdominal region. In the anterior region of the neck it dilates to form a *superior cervical ganglion*, and opposite the first rib it forms an *inferior cervical ganglion*. Thence, backwards, there is a ganglion on each sympathetic chain opposite each spinal nerve, and the two exchange fibres through a thread, the *ramus communicans*. To the sympathetic chain is delegated much of the routine work of reflex control of the bloodvessels and other viscera, which would otherwise fall upon the spinal cord.

§ 133. There are eight cervical (**spinal**) **nerves**, one in front of the atlas, and one behind each of the cervical vertebrae. The last four and the first thoracic (spinal) contribute to a leash of nerves running out to the fore limb, the *brachial plexus* (*plexus*, literally network, but here meaning a plaited cord). The fourth cervical also sends down a *phrenic nerve* (*p.n.*, Fig. 1), along by the external jugular vein and the superior caval vein to the diaphragm. The last three lumbar and the sacral nerves form a *sacral plexus*, supplying the hind limb.

§ 134. From the sympathetic in the hinder region of the thorax a nerve, the *great splanchnic nerve*, arises, and runs back to a ganglionated nervous network, just behind the coeliac artery, into which the vagus also enters; this is the *coeliac ganglion*, and together with a similar *superior mesenteric ganglion* around the corresponding artery, makes up a subsidiary visceral nervous network, the **solar plexus**. A similar and smaller nervous tangle, bearing an *inferior mesenteric ganglion*, lies near the inferior mesenteric artery.

§ 135. Finally, we may note the *pineal gland* and the *pituitary body*, as remarkable appendages above and below the thalamencephalon. Their function, if they have a function, is altogether unknown. Probably, they are in-

SHEET VIII.

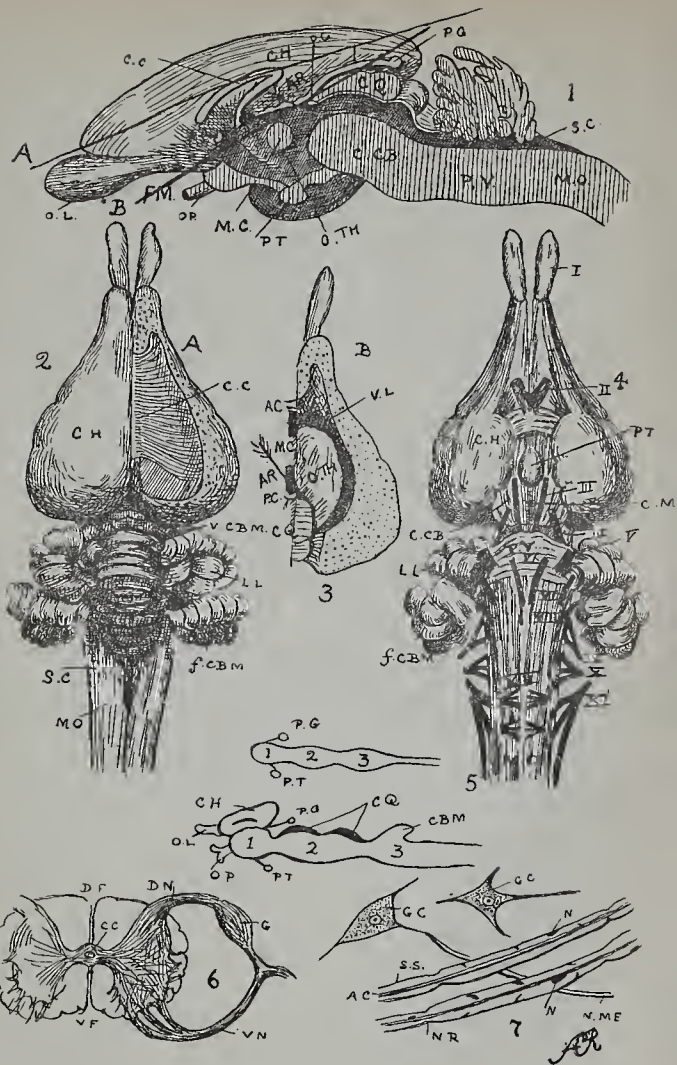
The Brain of the Rabbit.—1. In median section. 2. From above, with the top of the right hemisphere sliced off horizontally at the level of the corpus callosum. 3. A deeper section through the thalamencephalon, corresponding to B in (1). 4. Under-view of the brain. 5. Diagrams referred to in the text and for comparison with Sh. XII, 3b., and Sh. XVIII., 2.

ar., arrow in the *iter*. *a. c.*, the anterior commissure, a thickening of the anterior wall of the third ventricle. *c. c.*, corpus callosum. *c. cb.*, crura cerebri. *c. h.*, cerebral hemispheres. *c. g.*, corpora quadrigemina. *f. cbm.* (right), flocculus of the cerebellum. *l. h.*, left cerebral hemisphere (= *ch.*). *l. l.*, lateral lobe of cerebellum. *m. c.*, middle commissure. *m. o.*, medulla oblongata. *op.*, optic nerve. *o. l.*, olfactory lobe. *o. th.* (right), optic thalamus. *p. c.*, posterior commissure (thickening of postero-dorsal wall of the third ventricle). *p. g.*, pineal gland. *pt.*, pituitary body. *p. v.*, pons Varolii. *s. c.*, thin roof of the fourth ventricle. *v. cbm.*, vermis of cerebellum. *v. l.*, lateral ventricle.

Nerves.—I., olfactory. II., optic. III., oculo-motor. IV., patheticus. V., trigeminal. VI., abducens. VII., facial (portio dura). VIII., auditory (portio mollis). IX., gustatory (glossopharyngeal). X., pneumogastric or vagus. XI., spinal accessory. XII., hypoglossal.

6. The Spinal Cord in section.—*c. c.*, the central canal. *d. f.*, the dorsal fissure. *d. n.*, the dorsal nerve root; *g.*, its ganglion. *v. f.*, the ventral fissure. *v. n.*, the ventral nerve root. Note that in Fig. 1 the central canal is continuous with the fourth ventricle.

7. Histological elements.—*g. c.*, multipolar ganglion cell. *n.*, nucleus of a medullated nerve. *a. c.*, its axis fibre. *s. S.* (sheath of Schwann), medullary sheath interrupted at intervals by *n. R.*, the nodes of Ranvier. *n. m. f.*, a non-medullated fibre.





SHEET IX.

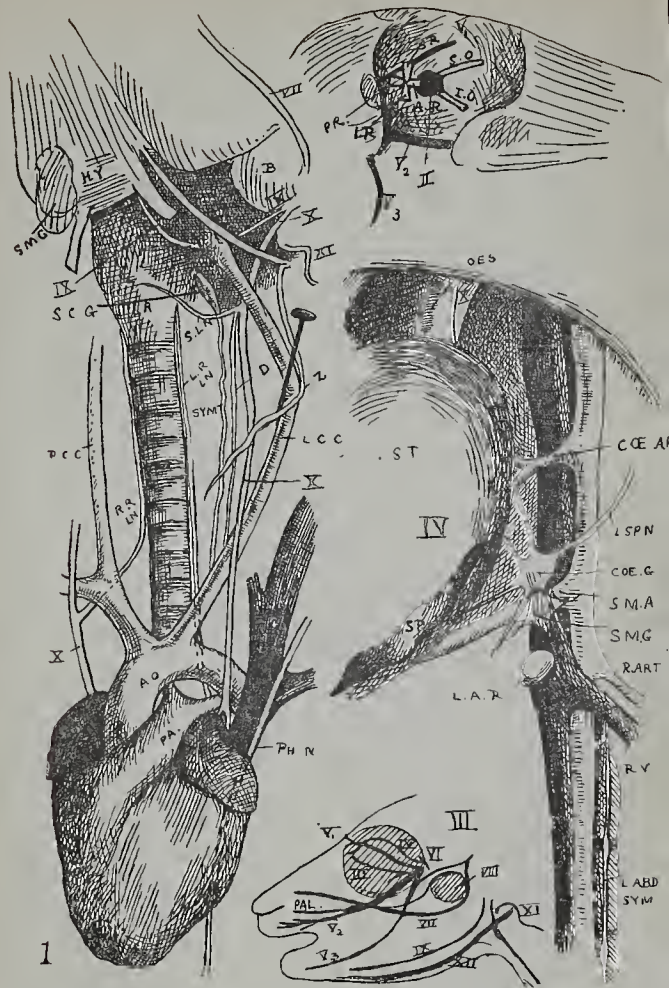
THE NERVES OF THE RABBIT.

1. Rough sketch of dissection of the neck from the left ventral aspect.—The bands of muscle between hyoid, mandible, and sternum, and the cœcæ and gland carefully cleared. *hy.* is the hyoid with its posterior cornua; *s. m. g.*, the right sub-maxillary gland (the left has been removed); *lr.* is the larynx, and *b.* the lulla. The nerves are numbered. *s. c. g.* is the superior cervical ganglion of the sympathetic (*sym.*); *s. l. n.* is the left superior laryngeal, and *δ.* the left depressor branch of *x.* *l. r. l. n.* is the left recurrent laryngeal looping under that solid connection between the pulmonary artery (*p. a.*) and the aortic arch (*ao.*), which was an open tube in the embryo, the *ductus arteriosus*; *r. r. l. n.* is the right recurrent looping under the sub-clavian. In early development the heart lay just beneath the pharynx in the position of the larynx (cp. Dog-fish and Frog); as the neck elongated, the heart shifted back with its vessels, and so the long loop of the recurrent laryngeal comes to be drawn out in this singular way. *ph. n.* is the *phrenic nerve*. *z.* is the *ramus descendens noni* of the twelfth nerve.

II. Diagram of orbit to show v_1 orbito-nasal, v_2 the maxillary, and v_3 the mandibular branch of v . In order to show these in dissection, the malar must be cut away, and the eye and glands of the orbit removed. $s. r., p. r., i. r.,$ and $a. r.,$ cut ends of the superior, posterior (or external), inferior, and anterior (or internal) recti muscles; $s. o.$ and $i. o.,$ the superior and inferior obliques.

III. General diagram of the Rabbit's cranial nerves.

IV. Rough sketch of dissection of the nerves and blood-vessels dorsal to stomach.—The stomach turned over to the animal's right, the Spigelian liver lobe cleared from the oesophagus, the mesentery supporting spleen and hiding solar plexus picked off, and the mesentery hiding sympathetic cleared. *x*, the *vagus* on *oes.*, the oesophagus. *st.*, the stomach, and *sp.* the spleen. *coe. art.*, coeliac artery, and *s. m. a.*, superior mesenteric artery. *l. sp. n.*, left splanchnic nerve; *coe. g.*, coeliac, and *s. m. g.*, superior mesenteric ganglion. The two together form the solar plexus. *l. a. r.*, left adrenal. *r. art.*, renal artery. *r. v.*, renal vein. *l. abd. sym.*, left abdominal sympathetic (in the actual dissection, the right would also be visible).



herited from ancestors to whom they were of value. Such structures are called reduced or **vestigial structures**, and among other instances are the clavicles of the rabbit, the hair on human limbs, the little pulpy nodule in the corner of the human eye, representing the rabbit's third eyelid, and the caudal vertebrae at the end of the human spinal column. In certain lowly reptiles, in the lampreys, and especially in a peculiar New Zealand lizard, the pineal gland has the most convincing resemblance to an eye, both in its general build and in the microscopic structure of its elements; and it seems now more than probable that this little vascular pimple in our brains is a relic of a third and median eye possessed by ancestral vertebrata. The pituitary body is probably equivalent to a ciliated pit we shall describe in the lancelet (*Amphioxus*).

VIII. *Renal and Reproductive Organs.*

§ 136. We have now really completed our survey of the individual animal's mechanism. But no animal that was merely complete in itself would be long sanctioned by nature. For an animal species to survive, there must evidently, also, be proper provision for the production of young, and the preservation of the species as well as of the individual. Hence in an animal's physiology and psychology we meet with a vast amount of *unselfish* provision, and its structure and happiness are more essentially dependent on the good of its kind than on its narrow personal advantage. The mammalia probably owe their present dominant position in the animal kingdom to the exceptional sacrifices made by them for their young. Instead of laying eggs and abandoning them before or soon after hatching, the females retain the eggs within their bodies until the development of the young is complete, and thereafter associate with them for the purposes of nourishment, protection, and education. In the matter of the tail, for instance, already noted, the individual rabbit incurs the disadvantage of conspicuousness for the rear, in order to further the safety of the young.

§ 137. The **female organs of reproduction** are shown in Sh. X. The essential organ is the ovary (*ov.*) in which the *ova* (eggs) are formed. Fig. 3 gives an enlarged and still more diagrammatic rendering of the ovary. There is a supporting ground mass, or *stroma*, into which numerous blood-vessels and nerves enter and break up. The *ova* appear first as small cells in the external substance of the ovary (as at 1), and move inward (2 and 3), surrounded by a number of sister cells, which afford them nourishment. At (4) an ovum with its surrounding group of cells is more distinct and near the centre of the ovary; a fluid is appearing within the *ovisac* as the development proceeds. (5) is a much more mature *ovisac* or *Graafian follicle*. The ovum (*ov.*), is now large, and its nucleus and nucleolus (the *germinal vesicle* and

spot) are very distinct. The wall of the follicle consists, in the mammal, of several layers of cells, the *membrana granulosa* (or "granulosa" simply); the ovum lies on its outer side embedded in a mass of cells, *diseus proligerus*, separated from actual contact with the ovum by a *zona pellucida*. The ripening follicle moves to the surface of the ovary and bursts, and the ovum falls into the body cavity. In Fig. 2, a ripe Graafian follicle (*G.F.*), projects upon the ovary.

§ 139. The liberated ovum is caught up by the funnel-shaped opening of the Fallopian tube, which passes without any very conspicuous demarcation into the cornu uteri (*c.ut.*) of its side; the two uterine cornua meeting together in the middle line form the *vagina* (*V.*), which runs out into a vestibule (*vb.*) opening between tumid lips to the exterior. The *urinary bladder* (*ur.b.*) also opens into the vestibule, and receives the two ureters from the kidney.

§ 140. In the **male** we find, in the position of the female uterus, a *uterus masculinus* (*u.m.*). The essential sexual organ is the *testis* (*T.*), a compact mass of coiling tubuli, which opens by a number of ducts, the *vasa efferentia*, into a looser and softer *epididymis* (*ep.*), which sends the sexual product onward through a *vas deferens* (*v.d.*), to open at the base of the uterus masculinus. The urinary bladder and ureters correspond with those of the female, and the common urogenital duct (= vestibule), the *urethra*, is prolonged into an erectile penis (*P.*), surrounded by a fold of skin, the *prepuce*. A prostate gland (*pr.*) contributes to the male sexual fluid. The character of the essential male element, the *spermatozoon*, and the general nature of the reproductive process, will be conveniently deferred until the chapters upon development are reached.

IX. *Classificatory Points.*

§ 141. The following facts of classificatory importance may now be considered, but their full force will be better appreciated after the study of other vertebrate types. They are such as come prominently forward in the comparison of the rabbit with other organisms.

§ 142. In the first place, the rabbit is a metazoon, one of the metazoa, *i.e.*, a multicellular organism, as compared with the amoeba, which belongs to the protozoa or one-cell animals (§ 55). In the next place, it is externally *bilaterally symmetrical*, its parts balance, and where, in its internal anatomy, it departs from this symmetry (as in the case of the aorta, the stomach and intestines, and the kidneys), the departure has an appearance of being the results of partial reductions and distortions of an originally quite symmetrical plan. And the facts of development strengthen this idea; in the very earliest stages we have *paired* aortic arches, of which the left only remains, a straight alimentary canal, and less asymmetrical kidneys. In the vast majority of animals the same bilateral symmetry is to be seen, but in the star-fish and sea-urehins, and in the jelly-fish, corals, sea anemones, and *hydra*, the general form of the animal is, instead, arranged round a centre, like a star and its rays, and the symmetry is called *radial*.

§ 143. We also see in various organs of the rabbit, and especially in the case of the limbs and vertebral column, what is called *metameric segmentation*, that is, a repetition of parts, one behind the other, along the axis of the body. Thus the bodies and arches of the vertebrae repeat each other, and so do the spinal nerves. The renal organ of the rabbit, some time before birth, displays a metameric arrangement of its parts; but this disappears, as development proceeds, into the compact kidney of the adult. But the metameric segmentation in the rabbit's organism is not nearly so marked as that of an earthworm, for instance, which is visibly a chain of

SHEET X.

REPRODUCTIVE ORGANS OF THE RABBIT.

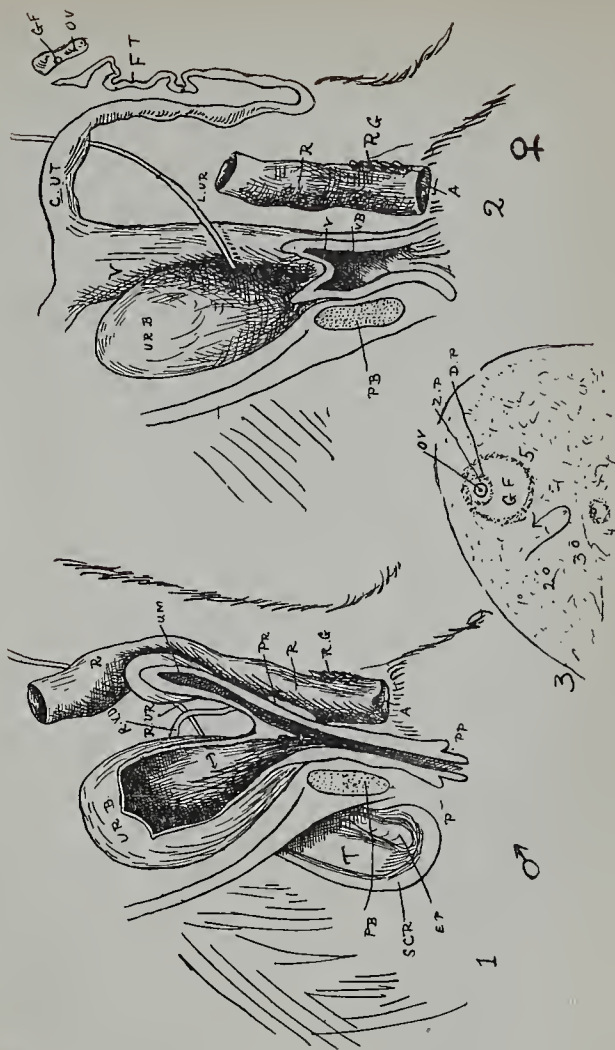
1. The Male. 2. The Female Organs. (The symbols below the figures indicate the sex.)

R., the rectum, with *r. g.*, the rectal gland, and *a*, the anus; *pb.* is the pubic symphysis which has been cut through; *ur. b.*, the urinary bladder; *r. ur.*, the right ureter; *l. ur.*, the left ureter.

In the Male, *T.* is the testis, *ep.* the epididymis, *scr.* the scrotal sac containing these; *r. v. d.*, the right vas deferens; *u. m.*, the uterus masculinus; *P.*, the penis; and *pp.*, the prepuce.

In the Female, *ov.* is the ovary, with a Graafian follicle, *G. F.*: *F. t.*, the left Fallopian tube; *c. ut.*, the left cornu uteri; *V.*, the vagina; and *vb.*, the vestibule.

3. Diagram of ovary with stages in the development of a Graafian follicle; 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, see text, § 137. The arrow indicates the changes in position of the developing follicles.



rings. If the student wants a perfect figure of metamerie segmentation he should think of a train of precisely similar carriages, or a string of beads. One bead, one carriage, one vertebra, would be a *metamere*.

§ 144. In contrast to metamerie segmentation is the *antimeric* repetition of radial symmetry (§ 142), in which each ray of the star is called an *antimere*. It is possible to have bilateral symmetry without a metamerie arrangement of parts, as in the mussel and the cuttle-fish; but metamerie segmentation without complete or reduced bilateral symmetry does not occur.

§ 145. We are now in a position to appreciate the fact that the old and more popularly known division of animals into vertebrata and invertebrata scarcely represents the facts of the case, that the primary division should be into protozoa and metazoa, and that the vertebrata are one of several groups of metazoa with a fundamental bilateral symmetry and imperfect metamerie segmentation.

The rabbit is one of the **vertebrata**, and, in common with all the other animals collected under this head, it has—

- (a) *A skeletal axis* (the vertebral column) *between its central nervous system and its body cavity*. In the adult rabbit this consists of a chain of vertebrae, but in the embryo (*i.e.*, the young rabbit before birth) it is represented by a continuous chord, the *notochord*, and it remains as such in some of the lowest vertebrata throughout life. In other words, in these lower vertebrata, the vertebral axis is not metameric.
- (b) *A dorsal and TUBULAR nervous axis* (§ 131, the central canal).
- (c) It has, though in the embryo only, certain slits between the throat and the exterior, like the *gill slits* of a fish. Such slits are—with one or two remarkable exceptions outside the sub-kingdom—distinctly vertebrate features, and remain, of course, in fishes throughout life.

The presence of true cartilage and bone mark a vertebrate, but vertebrata occur in which bone is absent.

§ 146. The rabbit shares the following features with all the vertebrata, except the true fishes, which do not possess any of them—

- (a) *Lungs* (but many fish have a swimming bladder which answers to the lungs in its anatomical relations).
- (b) *Limbs which consist of a proximal joint of one bone, an intermediate part of two, and a distal portion which has five digits, or is evidently a reduced form of the five-digit limb.**
- (c) *The absence of a median fin supported by fin rays.†*

§ 147. The rabbit shares the following features with all the vertebrata above the fishes and amphibia (= frogs, toads, newts, &c.)—

- (a) *Absence of gills (not gill slits, note) at any stage in development.*
- (b) *An amnion, and*
- (c) *An allantois in development.*

The meaning of (b) and (c) we shall explain to the student in the chapters on embryology. We simply mention them here to render our table complete.

§ 148. The rabbit shares with all **mammals**, and differs from all other vertebrata (*i.e.*, birds, reptiles, amphibia, and fishes), in having—

- (a) *Hair.*
- (b) *A diaphragm.*
- (c) *Only one aortic arch, and that on the left side of the body.*
- (d) *Its young born alive. (But two very reptile-like mammals of Australia, the duck-billed platypus and the echidna, lay eggs, and certain fish and reptiles bear living young.)*

* The frog shows indications of a sixth digit.

† The frog's tadpole has a median fin, but no fin rays.

(e) *Epiphyses* to its vertebral centra.*

(f) The cerebral hemispheres covering the mid-brain.

(g) Corpora quadrigemina instead of bigemina.

(h) A corpus callosum.

(i) A spirally coiled cochlea to the internal ear.

(In respect to *h* and *i* also, the echidna and platypus are scarcely mammalian.)

§ 149. The rabbit, together with the hares and conies, rats and mice, voles, squirrels, beavers, cavies, and guinea-pigs, is included in that order of the class of mammals which is called the **rodentia**, distinguished by the character of the incisor teeth from other orders of the class.

* But certain mammals have no such epiphyses.

X.—Questions and Exercises.

1. Describe the venous circulation of the rabbit (with diagrams). Compare a vein and artery. Compare the distribution of the great venous trunks with that of the arterial system.

2. Construct a general diagram of the circulation of the rabbit, to show especially the relation of the portal system, the lymphatics and lacteals, and the renal circulation, to the main blood current.

3. Draw the alimentary canal of the rabbit from memory.

4. What is a villus? Describe its epithelium, and the vessels within it. Write as explicit an account as you can of the absorbent action of a villus.

5. Tabulate the alimentary secretions, and their action on the food.

6. What is botryoidal tissue? Where does it occur? What is known of its functions?

7. Copy Diagram I. (enlarged), and insert upon it the visceral nerves as far as you can.

8. What are the most characteristic points in the mammalian vertebral column?

9. Describe cartilage and bone, and compare them with one another.

10. Give an account of the amoeba, and compare it with a typical tissue cell in a metazoon (*e.g.*, the rabbit).

11. Give a general account of connective tissue. What is tendon?

12. Trace, briefly, the increased modification of tissues in the vertebrata.

13. Describe, with diagrams, the structure of blood. State the function of each factor you describe.

14. Compare the pectoral with the pelvic limb and girdle. What other structures of the adult rabbit display a similar repetition of similar parts?

15. Draw from memory typical vertebrae from each region of the vertebral column.

16. What are bilateral symmetry and metameric segmentation?

17. Give a schedule of distinctive mammalian features.

18. Describe the rabbit's brain (with diagrams).

19. Give a list of the cranial nerves of the rabbit, and note their origin in the brain.

20. Give a list of the nerve apertures of the dog's skull.

21. What are the chief anatomical differences between a typical cranial, a spinal, and a sympathetic nerve?

22. Describe and figure the distribution of nerves V., VII., IX., and X.

23. Describe the muscles, glands, and nerves of the orbit of the rabbit.

24. Describe, with figures, the eye of the rabbit.

25. Give a diagram of the rabbit's *internal* ear.

26. Draw and describe the ear ossicles. What is their function?

27. Draw and state the precise position of the hyoid bone, the clavicle, the calcaneum, and the olecranon process.

28. Describe, as accurately as possible, the position of palatine bones, pterygoids, the ethmoid bone, the pre- and basi-sphenoids, in the dog's skull.

29. What is membrane bone? What is cartilage bone? Discuss their mutual relationship.

30. What is an excretion? What are the chief excretory products of an animal? How are they removed?

31. Describe the minute anatomy of the liver. Give a general account of its functions.

32. Describe the minute anatomy of the kidney, and the functions of the several parts.

33. What is ciliated epithelium? Where does it occur in the rabbit?

34. Describe the mechanism of respiration. What is the relation of respiration to the general life of the animal?

35. What are the functions of the skin? Describe its structure.

36. What is a secretion? Tabulate and classify secretory organs. What is a goblet cell?

37. Draw, from memory, the dorsal and ventral aspects of, and a median section through, a dog's skull.

38. Name any structures that appear to you to be vestiges or rudiments, *i.e.*, structures without adequate physiological reason, in the rabbit's anatomy.

39. How are such structures interpreted?

40. Describe the structure of striated muscular fibre. Describe its functions, and the various means by which they may be called into activity.

41. Describe the characters and structure of the blood of the rabbit. What is the lymphatic system? Describe its relation to the blood system in a mammal.

42. Describe the structure of (*a*) blood, (*b*) hyaline cartilage, (*c*) bone, in the rabbit; (*d*) point out the most important resemblances and differences between these tissues; (*e*) state what you know of the development of the same tissues.

43. Draw diagrams, with the parts named, of the male and female generative organs of the rabbit.

44. In the rabbit provided dissect on one side and demonstrate by means of flag-labels the main trunk of the vagus nerve, the phrenic nerve, and the recurrent laryngeal nerve.

45. Dissect the rabbit provided so as to expose the abdominal viscera. Mark with flag-labels the duct of the pancreas, the ureters, and the oviducts or the sperm ducts (as the case may be).

[Many of the above questions were actually set at London University Examinations in Biology.]

THE FROG.

I.—*General Anatomy.*

§ 1. We will now study the adult anatomy of the frog, and throughout we shall make constant comparisons with that of the rabbit. In the rabbit we have a distinctly land-loving, burrowing animal; it eats purely vegetable food, and drinks but little. In the frog we have a mainly insectivorous type, living much in the water. This involves the moister skin, the shorter alimentary canal, and the abbreviated neck (Rabbit, § 2) of the frog; the tail is absent—in a fish it would do the work the frog accomplishes with his hind legs—and the apertures which are posterior in the rabbit, run together into one dorsal opening, the *cloaca*. There is, of course (Rabbit, § 4), no hair, the skin is smooth, and an external ear is also absent. The remarkable looseness of the frog's skin is due to great lymph spaces between it and the body wall.

§ 2. If we now compare the **general anatomy** of the frog (*vide* Sh. XI.) with that of the rabbit, we notice that the diaphragm is absent (Rabbit, § 4), and the body cavity, or *coelom*, is, with the exception of the small bag of the pericardium round the heart, one continuous space. The forked tongue is attached in front of the lower jaw, and can be flicked out and back with great rapidity in the capture of the small insects upon which the frog lives. The posterior nares open into the *front* of the mouth—there is no long nasal chamber, and no palate, and there is no long trachea between the epiglottis and the lungs. The oesophagus is less distinct, and passes gradually, so far as external appearances go, into the bag-like stomach, which is much less

inflated and transverse than that of the rabbit. The duodenum is not a U-shaped loop, but makes one *together with the stomach*; the pancreas lies between it and the stomach, and is more compact than the rabbit's. There is no separate pancreatic duct, but the bile duct runs through the pancreas, and receives a series of ducts from that gland as it does so. The ileum is shorter, there is no sacculus rotundus, and the large intestine has no caecum, none of the characteristic sacculations of the rabbit's colon, and does not loop back to the stomach before the rectum section commences. The anus opens not upon the exterior, but into a cloacal chamber. The urinary and genital ducts open separately into this cloaca, and dorsally and posteriorly to the anus. The so-called urinary bladder is ventral to the intestine, in a position answering to that of the rabbit, but it has no connection with the ureters, and it is two-horned.

§ 3. The **spleen** is a small, round body, not so intimately bound to the stomach as in the rabbit, but in essentially the same position.

§ 4. Much that we know of the **physiology** of the frog is arrived at mainly by inferences from our mammalian knowledge. Its histology is essentially similar. Ciliated epithelium is commoner and occurs more abundantly than in the rabbit, in the roof of the mouth for instance, and its red blood corpuscles are much larger, *oval*, and *nucleated*.

§ 5. The **lungs** of the frog are bag-like; shelves and spongy partitions project into their cavities, but this structure is much simpler than that of the rabbit's lung, in which the branching bronchi, the imperfect cartilaginous rings supporting them, alveoli, arteries and veins, form together a quasi-solid mass.

§ 6. The **mechanism of respiration** is fundamentally different from that of the mammal. The method is as follows:—The frog opens its anterior nares, and depresses the floor of the mouth, which therefore fills with air. The

anterior nares are then closed, and the floor of the mouth rises and forces the air into the lungs—the frog, therefore, swallows its air rather than inhales it. The respiratory instrument of the rabbit is a suction pump, while that of the frog is a “buccal force pump.”

§ 7. The **heart** is not quadrilocular (*i.e.*, of four chambers), but trilocular (of three), and two structures not seen in *Lepus*, the **truncus arteriosus** and the **sinus venosus**, into the latter of which the venous blood runs before entering the right auricle, are to be noted. The single ventricle is blocked with bars of tissue that render its interior not an open cavity but a spongy mass. Fig. 2, Sh. XI., shows the heart opened; *l.au.* and *r.au.* are the left and right auricles respectively; the truncus arteriosus is seen to be imperfectly divided by a great *longitudino-spiral valve* (*l.s.v.*); *p.c.* is the pulmo-cutaneous artery supplying skin and lungs; *d.ao.* the dorsal aorta furnishing the supply of the body and limbs; and *c.a.* the carotid artery going to the head; all of which vessels (cp. Fig. 1) are paired.

§ 8. It might be inferred from this that pure and impure blood mix in the ventricle, and that a blood of uniform quality flows to lungs, head, and extremities; but this is not so. The spongy nature of the ventricle sufficiently retards this mixing. It will be noted that the opening of pulmonary arteries lies nearest to the heart, next come the aortic and carotid arches, which have a common opening at *A*. Furthermore, at *c.gl.* the carotid artery, repeatedly divides to form a close meshwork of arterioles, the *carotid gland*, forming a sponge-like plug in this vessel. Hence the pulmonary arteries yawn nearest for the blood, and, being short wide vessels, present the least resistance to the first rush of blood—mainly venous blood from the right auricle. As they fill up, the back resistance in them becomes equal, and then greater, than the resistance at *A*, and the rush of blood, now of a mixed quality, passes through the aperture. It selects the dorsal aorta, because the carotid arch, plugged by the carotid gland, offers the greater resistance. Presently, however, the back resistance of the filled dorsal aorta rises above this, and the last flow of blood from the ventricular systole—almost purely oxygenated blood from the left auricle—goes on towards the head.

§ 9. At the carotid gland the carotid artery splits into a *lingual* (*e.c.*) and a deeper internal *carotid* (*i.c.*). The dorsal aorta passes round on each side of the oesophagus, as indicated by the dotted lines in Figure 2, Sh. XI., and meets its fellow dorsal to the liver. Each arch gives off subelavian arteries to the limbs, and the left, immediately before meeting the right, gives off the coeliaco-mesenteric artery to the alimentary canal. This origin of the coeliaco-mesenteric artery a little to the left, is the only asymmetry (want of balance) in the arterial system of the frog, as contrasted with the very extensive asymmetry of the great vessels near the heart of the rabbit. Posteriorly the dorsal aorta forks into two common *iliac* arteries (right and left) supplying the hind limbs.

§ 10. Figure 3 gives a side view of the frog, to display **the circulation**. The venous return to the heart, as in the rabbit, is by paired *venae cavae anteriores* and by a single *vena cava inferior*. The factors of the anterior cava on either side are an *external jugular* (*ex.j.*) an innominate vein (*in.v.*) and a subelavian (*sch.v.*). The last receives not only the brachial vein (*b.v.*) from the fore limb, but also a large vein bringing blood for the skin, the cutaneous (*p.v.*). The innominate vein has also two chief factors, the *internal jugular* (*li.j.v.*) and the *subscapular* (*s.s.v.*). The blood returns from each hind limb by a *sciatic* (*l.sc.*) or *femoral* (*f.m.*) vein, and either passes to a *renal portal vein* (*l.r.p.*), which breaks into capillaries in the kidney, or by a paired pelvic vein (*l.p.v.* in Figs. 1 and 3) which meets its fellow in the middle line to form the anterior abdominal vein (*a.ab.v.*) going forward and uniting with the (median) *portal vein* (*p.v.*) to enter the liver. Comparing with the rabbit, we would especially call attention to the fact that the vena cava inferior extends posteriorly only to the kidney, and that there is a *renal portal system*. The blood from the hind limbs either flows by the anterior abdominal vein to the portal vein and liver, or it passes by the renal portal vein to the kidney. There the vein breaks up, and we find in the frog's kidney, just as we find in the frog's and rabbit's liver, a triple system of (*a*) nutritive arterial, (*b*) afferent* venous, and (*c*) efferent* venous vessels.

* *a*, *ad* = to; *e*, *ex* = out of.

SHEET XI.

1. General dissection of Frog (male).
2. The heart and great vessels laid open.
3. The circulatory system from the side.
4. Blood. *r. c.*, red corpuscle (oval and nucleated). *w. c.*, white corpuscle.

Small figure of Frog in left-hand corner is to show position of heel, *h*.

Reference Letters.

al. b., allantoic bladder (=urinary bladder). *c. ad.*, corpus adiposum. *cl. c.*, cut end of the right clavicle. *d.*, duodenum. *g. b.*, gall bladder. *il.*, ileum. *k.*, kidney. *l. au.*, left auricle. *lg.*, lung. *Liv.*, liver. *l. int.*, large intestine. *l. s. v.*, longitudino-spiral valve. *pan.*, pancreas. *r. au.*, right auricle. *st.*, stomach. *sp.*, spleen. *T.*, testis. *t. a.*, truncus arteriosus. *ur.*, urogenital duct. *v.*, ventricle of heart.

Arteries.

ao., aorta. *c. a.*, carotid arch. *c. gl.*, carotid gland. *coe.*, coeliac. *cu.*, cutaneous. *d. ao.*, dorsal aorta. *e. c.*, lingual artery. *i. c.*, internal carotid. *l. a. a.*, left aortic arch. *pa.*, pulmonary. *p. cu.*, pulmo-cutaneous. *r. a. a.*, right aortic arch. *s. cl.*, subclavian. *t. a.*, truncus arteriosus.

Veins of the Caval System.

b. v., brachial (from the fore limb). *e. j.*, external jugular. *h. v.*, hepatic vein. *i. j.*, internal jugular. *in. v.*, innominate vein. *l. v. c. s.*, left vena cava superior. *p. v.*, cutaneous vein. *s. cl. v.*, subclavian. *s. s. v.*, sub-scapular vein. *v. c. i.*, vena cava inferior.

Veins of the Portal and Renal Portal Systems.

a. ad. and *a. ab. v.*, anterior abdominal vein. *l. fm.*, left femoral. *l. p.*, left pelvic. *l. r. p.* (and *r. p.*), left renal portal. *l. sc.*, left sciatic. *p. v.*, portal vein.

(The cutaneous artery in the above figures is turned back. In dissection it will be found to lie over and beside the dorsal-ward sweep of the aortic arch.)



§ 12. The **lymphatic system** is extensively developed in the frog, but, in the place of a complete system of distinctly organized vessels, there are great lymph sinuses (ep. § 1). In Figure 5, Sh. XII., the position of two **lymph hearts** (*l.h.*, *l.h.*), which pump lymph into the adjacent veins, is shown.

§ 13. The skull of the frog will repay a fuller treatment, and will be dealt with by itself later. The **vertebral column** (Sh. XII.) consists of nine vertebrae, the centra of which have faces, not flat, but hollow in front (*pro-coelous*), and evidently without *epiphyses* (ep. the Rabbit). The anterior is sometimes called the *atlas*, but it is evidently not the homologue of the atlas of the rabbit, since the first spinal nerve has a corresponding distribution to the twelfth cranial of the mammal, and since, therefore, it is probable that the mammalian skull = the frog's skull + one (or more) vertebrae incorporated with it. Posteriorly the vertebral column terminates in the *urostyle*, a calcified unsegmented rod. The vertebrae have transverse processes, but no ribs.

§ 14. The **fore-limb** (Fig. 6, Sh. XII.) consists of an upper segment of one bone, the *humerus*, as in the rabbit; a middle section, the *radius* and *ulna*, fused here into one bone, and not, as in the mammalian type, separable; of a carpus, and of five digits, of which the fourth is the longest. The shoulder girdle is more important and complete than that of the higher type. There is a scapula (*sc.*) with an unossified cartilaginous supr. scapula (*s.sc.*); the anterior border of the scapula answers to the acromion. On the ventral side a cartilaginous rod, embraced by the *clavicle* (*cl.*) (a membrane bone in this type), runs to the sternum, and answers to the clavicle of the rabbit. In the place of the rabbit's coracoid process, is a coracoid bone (*co.*), which reaches from the glenoid cavity to the sternum; it is hidden on the right side of Fig. 6, which is a dorsal view of the shoulder girdle. There is a *pre-omosternum* (*o.st.*) and a *post-omosternum*, sometimes termed a *xiphisternum* (*x.*).

§ 15. Fig. 7 shows the **pelvic girdle and limb** of the frog. There is a femur (*f.*); tibia and fibula (*t.* and *f.*) are

completely fused; the proximal bones of the tarsus, the astragalus (*as.*), and calcaneum (*cal.*) are elongated, there are five long digits, and in the calcar (*c.*) an indication of a sixth. With considerable modifications of form, the three leading constituents of the rabbit's pelvic girdle occur in relatively identical positions. The greatly elongated ilium (*il.*) articulates with the *single* (cp. Rabbit) sacral vertebra (*s.v.* in Fig. 5). The *ischium* (*is.*) is relatively smaller than in the rabbit, and the pubis (*pu.*) is a ventral wedge of unossified cartilage. The shape of the pelvic girdle of the frog is a wide departure from that found among related forms. In connection with the leaping habit, the ilia are greatly elongated, and the pubes and ischia much reduced. Generally throughout the air-frequenting vertebrata, we find the same arrangement of these three bones, usually in the form of an inverted Y—the ilium above, the ischium and pubis below, and the acetabulum at the junction of the three.

§ 16. The **uro-genital organs** of the frog, and especially those of the male, correspond with embryonic stages of the rabbit. In this sex the testes (*T.*, Sh. XIII.) lie in the body cavity, and are white bodies usually dappled with black pigment. *Vasa efferentia* (*v.e.*) run to the internal border of the anterior part of the kidney, which answers, therefore, to the rabbit's epididymis. The hinder part of the kidney is the predominant renal organ. There is a common uro-genital duct, into which a seminal vesicle, which is especially large in early spring, opens. This is the permanent condition of the frog. In the rabbit, for urogenital duct, we have ureter and vas deferens; the testes and that anterior part of the primitive kidney, the epididymis, shift back into the scrotal sacs, and the ureters shift round the rectum and establish a direct connection with the bladder, carrying the genital ducts looped over them. The oviducts of the female do not fuse distally to form a median vagina as they do in the rabbit. In front of the genital organ in both sexes is a corpus adiposum (*c.ad.*), which acts as a fat store, and is peculiar to the frogs and toads. The distal end of the oviduct of the female is in the breeding season (early March) enormously distended with ova, and the ovaries become then

the mere vestiges of their former selves. The distal end of the oviduct is, therefore, not unfrequently styled the *uterus*. There is no penis in the male, fertilisation of the ova occurring as they are squeezed out of the female by the embracing fore limbs of the male. The male has a pad, black in winter, shown in Fig. 1, which is closely pressed against the ventral surface of the female in copulation, and which serves as a ready means of distinguishing the sex.

§ 17. The **spinal cord** has a general similarity to that of the rabbit; the ratio of its size to that of the brain is larger, and the nerves number ten pairs altogether. The first of these (*sp. 1*, in Fig. 2, Sh. XII.) corresponds in distribution with the rabbit's *hypoglossal* nerve, a point we shall refer to again when we speak of the skull. The second and third constitute the brachial plexus. The last three form the sciatic plexus going to the hind limb.

§ 18. The same essential parts are to be found in the **brain** of both frog and rabbit, but in the former the adult is not so widely modified from the primitive condition as in the latter. The **fore-brain** consists of a thalamencephalon (*th.c.* and 1), which is exposed in the dorsal view of the brain, and which has no middle commissure. The cerebral hemispheres (*c.h.*) are not convoluted, do not extend back to cover parts behind them, as they do in the rabbit, and are not connected above the roof of the thalamencephalon by a corpus callosum. Moreover, the parts usually regarded as the olfactory lobes (*rh.*) fuse in the middle line. The **mid-brain** gives rise to the third nerve, and has the optic lobes on its dorsal side, but these are hollow, and they are not subdivided by a transverse groove into corpora quadrigemina, as in the rabbit. In the **hind-brain** the cerebellum is a mere band of tissue without lateral lobes or flocculi, and the medulla gives origin only to nerves four to ten; there is no eleventh nerve, and the hypoglossal is the first spinal—from which it has been assumed that the rabbit's medulla equals that of the frog, plus a portion of the spinal cord incorporated with it. The hypoglossal is very distinctly seen on opening the skin beneath the hyoid plate.

§ 19. The first, second, third, and fourth **cranial nerves** of the frog correspond with those of the rabbit in origin and distribution. So do five, six, and eight. The seventh nerve forks over the ear-drum—the larger branch emerging behind it and running superficially, as shown in Fig. 4. There is also a deeper palatine branch of VII. (*P.*) running under V_2 and V_3 below the orbit, and to be seen together with V_1 and V_2 after removal of the eyeball. The ninth nerve similarly forks over the first branchial slit of the tadpole, and evidence of the fork remains in the frog. It is seen curving round anterior to the hypoglossal nerve, and lying rather deeper in dissection. The vagus (tenth) nerve is distributed to heart, lungs, and viscera—in the tadpole it also sends forking branches over the second, third, and fourth branchial slits. It lies deeper than IX., and internal to the veins, and runs close beside the cutaneous artery. Most of these nerves are easily dissected, and no student should rest satisfied until he has actually seen them.

§ 20. The **sympathetic chain** is closely connected with the aorta. It is, of course, paired, and is easily found in dissection by lifting the dorsal aorta and looking at its mesentery. In the presence of ganglia corresponding to the spinal nerves, and of *rami communicantes*, it resembles that of the rabbit.

§ 21. The whole of this chapter is simply a concise comparison of frog and rabbit. In addition to reading it, the student should very carefully follow the annotations to the figures, and should copy and recopy these side by side with the corresponding diagrams of the other types.

SHEET XII.

1. Upper view of the Frog's brain.
2. Under view of the same.
3. The same—median section.
4. The distribution of the Frog's nerves. Cp. Sheet IX., III.

The shaded part in 4 is the tympanum. The *hyoid apparatus* is roughly represented in black to show its relation to IX. (dorsal to it, and *sp. 1* (ventral). Compare IX. and XII. in Sheet IX. The nerves are numbered. *c. h.*, cerebral hemispheres. *cb.*, the cerebellum. *l. t.*, lamina terminalis. *mb.*, mid-brain. *md.*, medulla oblongata. *o. l.*, optic lobes. *pin.*, pineal gland, *pit.*, pituitary body. *r. h.*, olfactory lobes (rhinencephalon). *th. c.*, thalamencephalon. *sp. 1*, first spinal nerve. *sp. 2, 3*, brachial plexus to fore limb. *f. t.*, filum terminale. *g. tr.*, ganglion on the fifth nerve.

5. The spinal column (and pelvic girdle) of the Frog.

5b. Vertebrae.

6. The pectoral girdle and limb, dorsal view.

7. The pelvic girdle and right limb from the side.

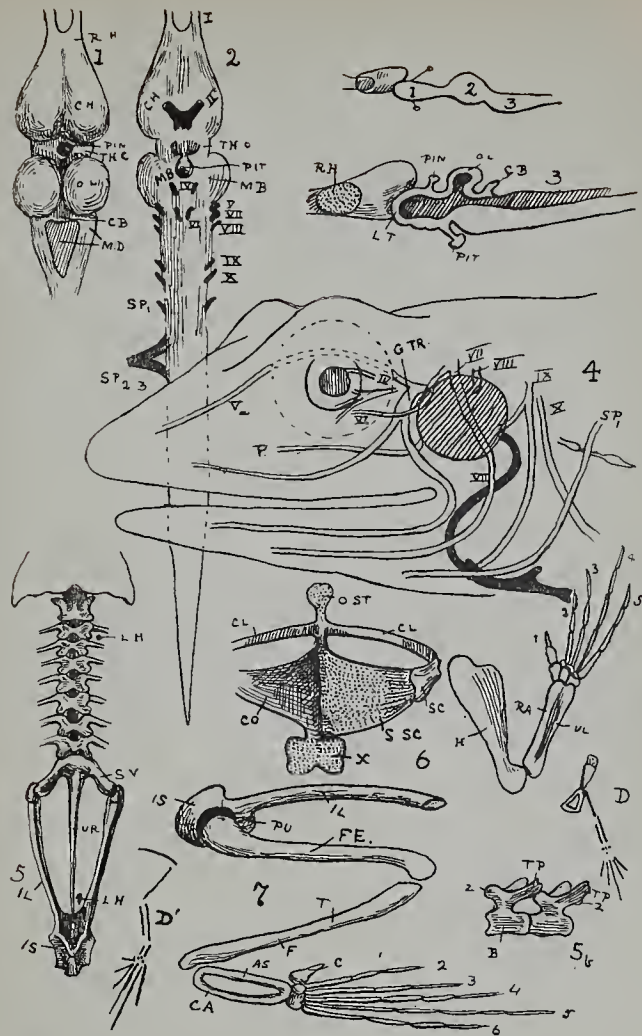
(*l. h.* shows the position of the right lymph hearts—they are paired.)

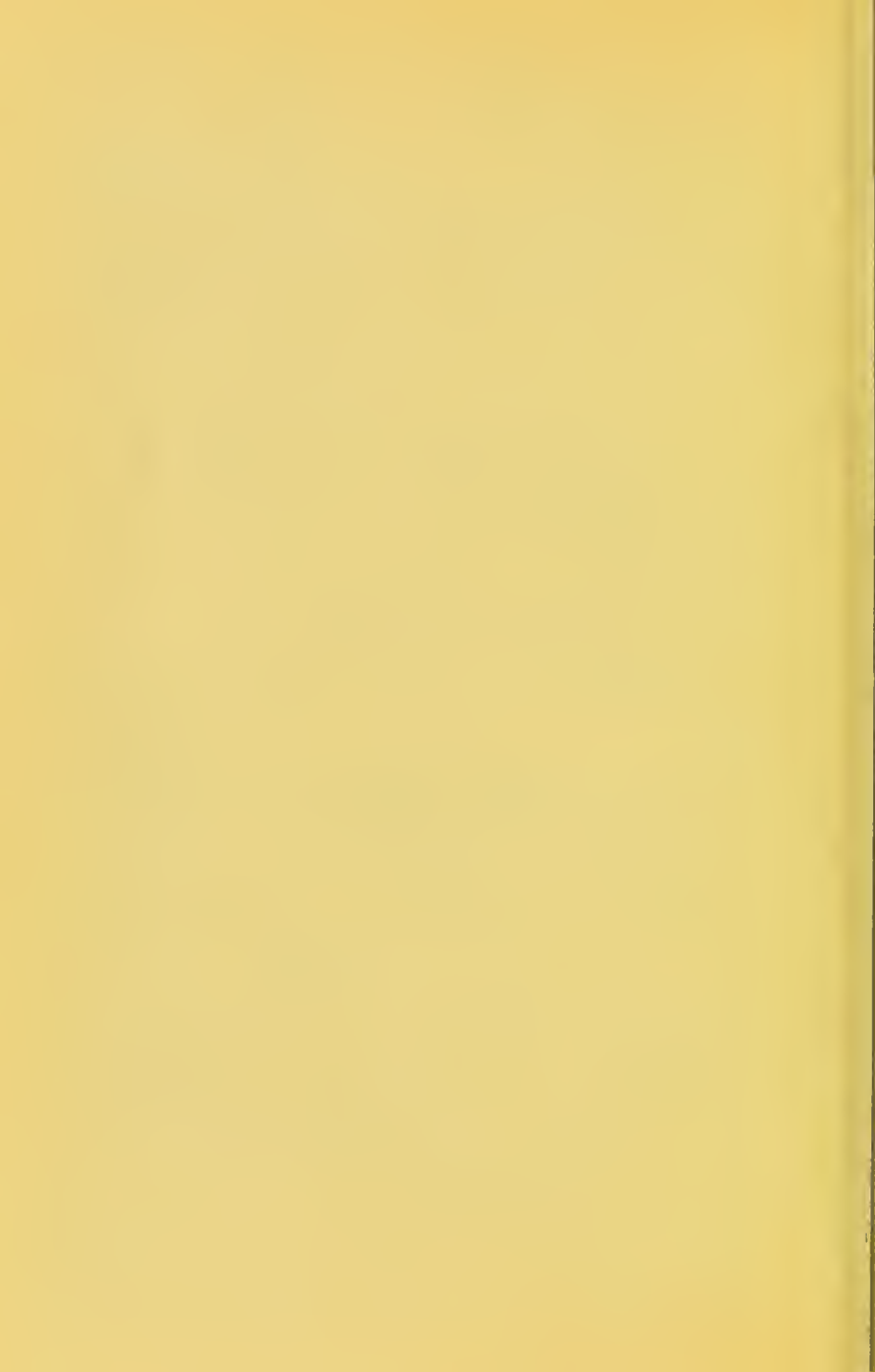
as., astragalus. *b.*, body. *cal.*, calcaneum. *c.*, calcar (? = a sixth digit). *co.*, coracoid. *cl.*, clavicle overlying a *procoracoid cartilage*. *f.*, fibula. *FE.*, femur. *h.*, humerus. *il.*, ilium. *is.*, ischium. *o. st.*, omosternum. *pu.*, pubis. *r.*, radius. *sc.*, scapula. *s. sc.*, supra-scapula. *s. v.*, sacral vertebra. *t.*, tibia. *t. p.*, transverse process. *ul.*, ulna. *ur.*, urostyle. *x.*, xiphisternum. *z.*, zygapophysis.

1, 2, &c., first, second, &c., digits.

D. and *D'* are simplified diagrams of the limbs for comparison with the similar ones of the Rabbit. In each girdle we have a dorsal ossification (*scapula*, *ilium*) and two ventral parts (*pubis* and *procoracoid cartilage*, *ischium* and *coracoid*), and at the meeting-place of the three in each case the proximal bone of the limb (*humerus*, *femur*) articulates.

To face page 72.





SHEET XIII.

UROGENITAL ORGANS OF THE FROG.

1. The Male.

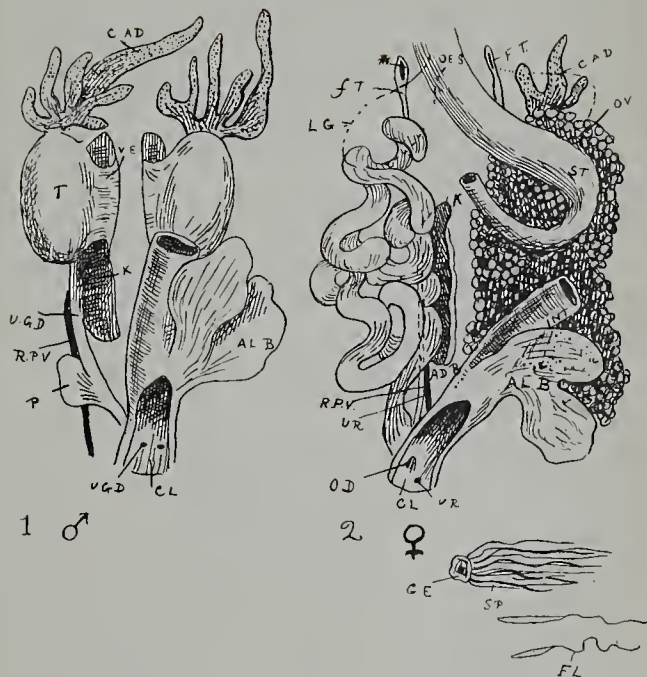
2. The Female. The oviduct removed on the animal's left, and the ovary on its right.

Organs common to both sexes.—*oes.*, oesophagus. *st.*, stomach. *k.*, kidney. *int.*, intestine. *al. b.*, allantoic bladder. *cl.*, cloaca. *ad.*, corpus adiposum. *r. p. v.*, renal portal vein. *lg.* (dotted outline of) lung.

In the Male.—*T.*, testis. *v. e.*, vasa efferentia. *u. g. d.*, urogenital duct. *p.*, prostate gland.

In the Female.—*ov.*, ovary. *ur.*, ureter. *o. d.*, oviduct (letters at the opening). *adr.*, adrenal. *f. t.*, fallopian tube (anterior part of oviduct). * its opening. (This would be the condition about midwinter.) In March, *o. d.* will be either enormously distended with eggs, or large, flabby, and empty, and *ov.* will be small and brownish, without any large eggs; the ovary gradually recovers its size through the summer.

3. Spermatozoa attached to the parent cell (*g. e.*) from the lining epithelium of the testis, and one free. *fl.*, the flagellum.



II. *The Skull of the Frog (and the vertebrate skull generally).*

§ 22. We have already given a description of the mammalian skull, and we have stated where the origin of the several bones was in membrane, and where in cartilage; but a more complete comprehension of the mammalian skull becomes possible with the handling of a lower type. We propose now, first to give some short account of the development and structure of the skull of the frog, and then to show briefly how its development and adult arrangement demonstrate the mammalian skull to be a fundamentally similar structure, complicated and disguised by further development and readjustment.

§ 23. Figure 1, I., Sh. XIV., shows a dorsal view of a young tadpole cranium; the brain has been removed, and it is seen that it was supported simply upon two cartilaginous rods, the *trabeculae cranii* (*tr.c.*). Behind these trabeculae comes the notochord (*n.c.*), and around its anterior extremity are paired tracts of cartilage, the *parachordals* (*p.c.*). These structures, underlying the skull, are all that appears at first of the brain box. In front, and separate from the cranium, are the nasal organs (*n.c.*); the eyes lie laterally to the trabeculae, and laterally to the parachordals are two tracts of cartilage enclosing the internal ear, the otic capsules.

§ 24. Figure 1, II., is a more advanced phase of the same structures. The trabeculae have met in front and sent forward a median (*c.t.*) and lateral parts (*a.o.*) to support the nasal organs. They have also flattened out very considerably, and have sent up walls on either side of the brain to meet above it and form an incomplete roof (*t.*) over it. The parachordals have similarly grown up round the hind-brain and formed a complete ring, the roof of which is indicated by *b.* Further, the otic capsules are fusing with the brain-case. With certain differences of form these elements—the trabeculae, the parachordals, and the otic capsules, are also the first formed structures of the mammalian cranium.

§ 25. In Figures 1, I. and II., there appears beneath the eye a bar of cartilage (*p.p.*), the *palato-pterygoid* cartilage, which is also to be seen from the side in Figures 8, I. and III. It will be learnt from these latter that this bar is joined in front to the cranium behind the nasal organ, and behind to the otic capsule. The cartilaginous bar from the palato-pterygoid to the otic capsule is called the *quadrate*, and at the point of junction, at the postero-ventral angle of the palato-pterygoid, articulates with the cartilaginous bar which is destined to form the substratum of the lower jaw—*Meckel's cartilage* (*M.c.* in Fig. 8, I.).

§ 26. Figure 2 shows a dorsal view of these structures in a young frog. The parts corresponding to these in 1, II. will be easily made out, but now ossification has set in at various points of this cartilaginous cranium. In front of the otic capsule is the paired *pro-otic* bone (*p.o.*); behind it at the sides of the parachordal ring is the paired *ex-occipital* (*e.o.*); in front of the cranium box, and behind the nasal capsules, is a ring of bone, the (median, but originally paired) *sphenethmoid* (*s.e.*). A splint of bone, the *quadrato-jugal*, appears at the angle of articulation with the lower jaw. These are all the cartilage bones that appear in the cranium and upper jaw of the frog.

§ 27. But another series of bones, developed first chiefly in dermal connective tissue, and coming to plate over the cranium of cartilage, are not shown in Figure 2. They are, however, in Figure 3. These membrane bones are: along the dorsal middle line, the *parieto-frontals* (*p.f.*), originally two pairs of bones which fuse in development, and the *nasals* (*na.*). Round the edge of the jaw, and bearing the teeth, are *pre-maxillae* (*p.m.*), and *maxillae* (*mx.*), and overlying the quadrate cartilage and lateral to the otic capsules are the T-shaped *squamosal bones* (*sq.*). In the ventral view of the skull (Fig. 4) we see a pair of *vomers* (*vo.*) bearing teeth, a pair of *palatines* (*pal.*), and a pair of *pterygoids* (*pt.*) (which palatines and pterygoids, we may note, unlike those of the rabbit, are membrane bones), and a great median dagger-shaped *para-sphenoid* (*p.sp.*). These two Figures, and 5, which

shows the same bones in side view, should be carefully mastered before the student proceeds with this chapter. The cartilage bones are distinguished from membrane bones by cross-shading.

§ 28. Turning now to Figure 8, I., we have a side view of a tadpole's skull. On the ventral side of the head is a series of vertical cartilaginous bars, the visceral arches supporting the walls of the tadpole's gill slits. The first of these is called the *hyoid arch* (*c.h.*), and the four following this, the first (*br.₁*), second, third, and fourth (*br.₄*), branchial arches. Altogether there are four gill slits, and between the hyoid arch and the jaw arch, as it is called (= Meckel's cartilage + the palato-pterygoid), is "an imperforate slit," which becomes the ear-drum.* The frog no longer breathes by gills, but by lungs, and the gills are lost, the gill slits closed, and the branchial arches consequently much reduced. Figures 8, II., and 8, III., show stages in this reduction. The hyoid arch becomes attached to the otic capsule, and its median ventral plate, including also the vestiges of the first, second, and fourth branchial arches, is called the hyoid apparatus. In Figure 5, the apparatus is seen from the side; *c.h.* is called the (right) anterior cornu† of the hyoid. The function of the hyoid apparatus in the frog is to furnish a basis of attachment to the tongue muscles; it remains cartilaginous, with the exception of the relic of one branchial arch, which ossifies as the *thyro-hyal* (Fig. 7, *th.h.*). It will be noted that, as development proceeds, the angle of the jaw swings backward, and the hyoid apparatus shifts relatively forward. These changes of position are indicated in Figure 8, III., by little arrow-heads.

* We may note here that, comparing the ear of the frog with that of the rabbit, there is no *external* ear. There is, moreover, no bulla supporting the middle ear, and the tympanic membrane stretches between the squamosal in front and the anterior cornu of the hyoid behind. A rod-like *columella auris* replaces the chain of ear ossicles, and may, or may not, answer to the stapes alone, or even possibly to the entire series. In the internal ear there is no cochlea, and the otic mass is largely cartilaginous instead of entirely bony.

† Pl. *cornua*.

§ 29. Before proceeding to the comparison of the mammalian skull with this, we would strongly recommend the student thoroughly to master this portion of the work, and in no way can he do this more thoroughly and quickly than by taking a parboiled frog, picking off the skin, muscle, and connective tissue from its skull, and making out the various bones with the help of our diagrams.

§ 30. Figure 9 represents, in the most diagrammatic way, the main changes in *form* of the essential constituents of the cranio-facial apparatus, as we pass from the amphibian to the mammalian skull. *F.* is the frog from the side and behind; *b.c.* is the brain-case, *o.c.* the otic capsule, *e.* the eye, *n.c.* the nasal capsule, *p.p.* the palato-pterygoid cartilage, *mx.* the maxillary membrane bones, *sq.* the squamosal, and *mb.* the mandible. The student should compare with Figure 5, and convince himself that he appreciates the diagrammatic rendering of these parts. Now all the distinctive differences *in form* from this of the dog's skull (*D.*), are reducible to two primary causes—

(1) The brain is enormously larger, and the brain-case is vastly inflated, so that—

- (a) the otic capsule becomes embedded in the brain-case wall;
- (b) the palato-pterygoid rod lies completely underneath the brain-case instead of laterally to it;
- (c) the squamosal tilts down and in, instead of down and out, and the lower jaw articulates with its outer surface instead of below its inner, and, moreover, with the enormous distention of the brain-case it comes about that the squamosal is incorporated with its wall.

(2) The maxilla anteriorly and the palatine posteriorly send down palatine plates that grow in to form the bony palate, cutting off a nasal passage (*n.p.*) from the mouth cavity (*m.p.*), and carrying the posterior nares from the front part of the mouth, as they are in the frog, to the pharynx. Hence the vomer of the dog lies not in the ceiling of the mouth, but in the floor of this nasal passage.

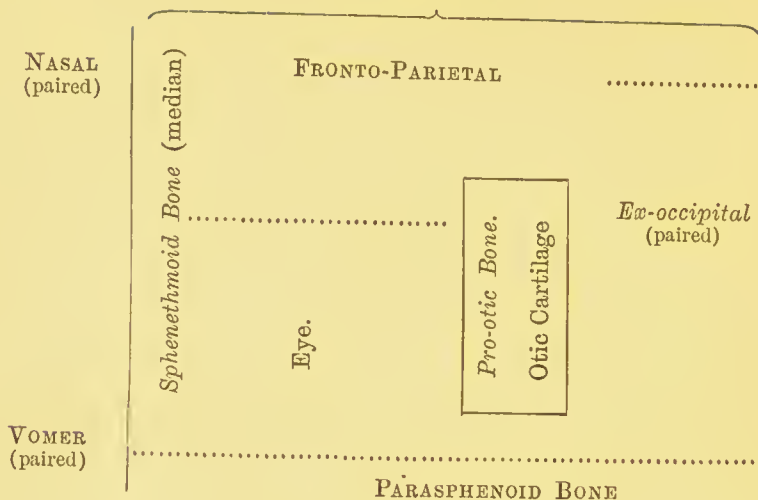
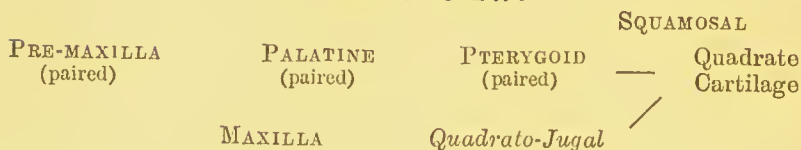
§ 31. The quadrate cartilage of the frog is superseded by the squamosal as the suspensorium of the lower jaw. It is greatly reduced, therefore; but it is not entirely absent. In the young mammal, a quadrate cartilage can be traced, connected with the palato-pterygoid cartilage, and articulating with Meckel's cartilage. Its position is, of course, beneath the squamosal, and just outside the otic capsule. As development proceeds, the increase in size of the quadrate does not keep pace with that of the rest of the skull structures. It loses its connection with the palato-pterygoid, and apparently ossifies as a small ossicle—the *incus* of the middle ear. A small nodule of cartilage, cut off from the proximal end of Meckel's cartilage, becomes the *malleus*. The *stapes* would appear to be derived from the hyoid arch. Hence these small bones seem to be the relics of the discarded jaw suspensorium of the frog utilized in a new function. Considerable doubt, however, attaches to this interpretation—doubt that, if anything, is gaining ground.

§ 32. The tympanic bulla of the dog is not indicated in Diagram 9, and it would appear to be a new structure (*neomorph*), not represented in the frog.

§ 33. Besides these great differences in form, there are important differences in the amount and distribution of centres of ossification of the skull of frog and mammal. There is no parasphenoid in the mammal*; and, instead, a complete series of ossifications, the median-, basi-, and pre-sphenoids, and the lateral ali- and orbito-sphenoids occur. The points can be rendered much more luminously in a diagram than in the text, and we would counsel the student to compare this very carefully with that of the Rabbit.

* Faint vestigial indications occur in the developing skulls of some insectivora.

§ 34.

CRANIUM.**UPPER JAW.****LOWER JAW.**

§ 35. Additional points to be noticed are: (1) The otic capsule (= periotic bone) of the dog ossifies from a number of centres, one of which is equivalent to the frog's proötic. (2) The several constituents of the lower jaw are not to be distinguished in the adult mammal. (3) The frog has no lachrymal bone.

§ 36. We are now in a position to notice, without any danger of misconception, what is called the segmental theory of the skull. Older anatomists, working from adult structure

only, conceived the idea that the brain-case of the mammal represented three inflated vertebrae. The most anterior had the presphenoid for its body, the orbito-sphenoids for its neural processes, and the arch was completed above by the frontals (frontal segment). Similarly, the basi-sphenoids, ali-sphenoids, and parietals formed a second arch (parietal segment), and the ex-, basi-, and supra-occipitals a third (occipital segment). If this were correct, in the frog, which is a more primitive rendering of the vertebrate plan, we should find the vertebral characters more distinct. But, as a matter of fact, as the student will perceive, frontal segment, parietal segment, and occipital segment, can no longer be traced; and the mode of origin from trabeculae and parachordals show very clearly the falsity of this view. The vertebrate cranium is entirely different in nature from vertebrae. The origin of the parietals and frontals as *paired* bones in *membrane* reinforces this conclusion.

§ 37. But as certainly as we have no such metamerie segmentation, as this older view implies, in the brain-case of the frog, so quite as certainly is metamerie segmentation evident in its branchial arches. We have the four gill slits of the tadpole and their bars repeating one another; the hyoid bar in front of these is evidently of a similar nature; and that the ear drum is derived from an imperforate gill slit is enforced by the presence of an open slit (the *spiracle*) in the rays and dog fish in an entirely equivalent position. Does the mouth answer to a further pair of gill slits, and is the jaw arch (palato-pterygoid + Meekel's cartilage) equivalent to the arches that come behind it? This question has been asked, and answered in the affirmative, by many morphologists, but not by any means by *all*. The cranial nerves have a curious similarity of arrangement with regard to the gill slits and the mouth; the fifth nerve forks over the mouth, the seventh forks over the ear drum, the ninth, in the tadpole and fish, forks over the first branchial slit, and the tenth is, as it were, a leash of nerves, each forking over one of the remaining gill slits. But this matter will be more intelligible when the student has worked over a fish type, and need not detain us any further now.

§ 38. See also § 13 again, in which is the suggestion that the *occipital part* of the skull is possibly a fusion of vertebrae, a new view with much in its favour, and obviously an entirely different one from the old "segmental" view of the entire skull, discussed in § 36.

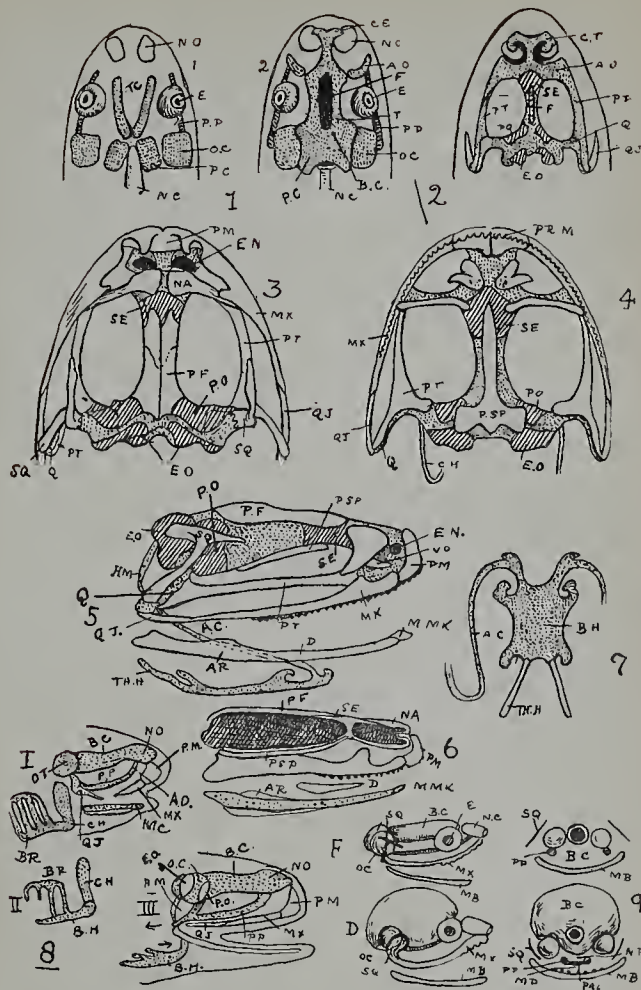
SHEET XIV.

SKULL STRUCTURE AND DEVELOPMENT OF THE FROG.

1. I., II., early and late stages of the Tadpole's chondrocranium. Diagrammatic.
 2. Dorsal view of a young Frog's cranium—the membrane bones removed. Diagrammatic.
 - 3 and 4. Dorsal and ventral views, respectively, of the Frog's skull—the lower jaw removed.
 5. Side view of the Frog's skull.
 6. Median section of the brain case.
 7. The hyoid apparatus.
 8. I., II., III., progressive stages of the Tadpole's skull from the side.
- After W. K. Parker.
9. *F.*, side and hind views of the Frog's skull. *D.*, the same of the Dog. Roughly diagrammatic.

N.B.—In all, cartilage is dotted, cartilage bone cross-barred, and membrane bone, white.

a. c., anterior cornu of hyoid (= *CH.*). *a. o.*, antorbital cartilage.
ar., angulo-splenic. *b. c.*, brain case. *b. h.*, body of hyoid. *br.*,
branchial arches. *CH* = *a. c.* *c. t.*, cornua trabeculi. *d.*, dentary
e., eye. *E. N.*, external nares. *e. o.*, occipital bone. *f.*, fenestra
(membranous part of cranial wall). *h. m.*, hyomandibular cleft
(= Eustachian tube and ear drum). *mb.*, mandible. *M. C.*, Meckel's
Cartilage. *m. mk.*, mento-Meckelian bone. *m. p.*, mouth passage.
mx., maxilla. *n. c.*, notochord. *n. o.*, nasal organ. *n. p.*, nasal
passage. *ot.*, or *o. c.*, otic (auditory) capsule. *PAL.*, hard palate of
Mammal. *pal.*, palatine bone. *p. c.*, parachordal. *p. f.*, parieto-
frontal. *p. m.*, premaxilla. *P. N.*, internal nares. *p. o.*, prootic bone.
p. p., palato-pterygoid cartilage. *psp.*, parasphenoid bone. *pt.*,
pterygoid bone. *q.*, quadrate cartilage. *q. j.*, quadrato-jugal. *s. e.*,
sphenethmoid bone. *sq.*, squamosal. *t.*, trahecular part of brain
box. *t. c.*, trabecula. *th. h.*, thyrohyal.





Questions on the Frog.

[All these questions were actually set at London University Examinations.]

1. Give an account, with illustrative sketches, of the digestive organs of the common frog, specifying particularly the different forms of epithelium met with in the several regions thereof.

2. Describe the heart of a frog, and compare it with that of a fish and of a mammal, mentioning in each case the great vessels which open into each cavity.

3. Compare with one another the breathing organs and the mechanism of respiration in a frog and in a rabbit. Give figures showing the condition of the heart and great arteries in these animals, and indicate in each case the nature of the blood in the several cavities of the heart.

4. Draw diagrams, with the parts named, illustrating the arrangement of the chief arteries of (*a*) the frog, (*b*) the rabbit. (*c*) Compare briefly the arrangements thus described. (*d*) In what important respects does the vascular mechanism of the frog differ from that of the fish, in correlation with the presence of lungs?

5. In the frog provided, free the heart, both aortic arches, dorsal aorta as far as its terminal bifurcation, and both chains of sympathetic ganglia from surrounding structures; and remove them, in their natural connection, from the animal into a watch-glass.

6. Describe the male and female reproductive organs of the common frog, and give some account of their development.

7. Describe, with figures, the bones of the limbs and limb-girdles of a frog.

8. Remove the brain from the frog provided, and place it in spirit. Make a lettered drawing of its ventral and dorsal surfaces.

9. Point out the corresponding regions in the brain of a frog and a mammal, and state what are the relations of the three primary brain-vesicles to these regions.

10. (*a*) Give an account, with diagrams, of the brain of the frog; (*b*) point out the most important differences between it and the brain of the rabbit. (*c*) Describe the superficial origin and the distribution of the third, (*d*) of the fifth, (*e*) of the seventh, (*f*) of the ninth, and (*g*) of the tenth cranial nerves of the frog.

11. Describe, with figures, the brain of a frog, and compare it with that of a rabbit. What do you know concerning the functions of the several parts of the brain in the frog?

12. Describe briefly the fundamental properties of the spinal cord in the frog. By what means would you determine whether a given nerve is motor or sensory?

13. Prepare the skull of the frog provided. Remove from it and place in glycerine on a glass slip the fronto-parietal and parasphenoid bones. Label them. Mark on the skull with long needles and flag-labels the sphenethmoid and the pro-otic bones.

14. Compare the skull of the rabbit and the frog; especially in regard to the attachment of the jaw apparatus to the cranium, and other points which distinctly characterize the higher as contrasted with the lower vertebrata.

15. Describe the skeleton of the upper and lower jaw (*a*) in the frog, (*b*) in the rabbit. Point out exactly what parts correspond with one another in the two animals compared. (*c*) What bone in the rabbit is generally regarded as corresponding to the quadrate cartilage of the frog?

THE DOG-FISH.

I.—*General Anatomy.*

§ 1. In the dog-fish we have a far more antique type of structure than in any of the forms we have hitherto considered. Forms closely related to it occur among the earliest remains of vertebrata that are to be found in the geological record. Since the immeasurably remote Silurian period, sharks and dog-fish have probably remained without any essential changes of condition, and consequently without any essential changes of structure, down to the present day. Then, as now, they dominated the seas. They probably branched off from the other vertebrata before *bone* had become abundant in the *inner* skeleton, which is consequently in their case cartilaginous, with occasional “calcification” and no distinct bones at all. Unlike the majority of fish, they possess no swimming bladder—the precursor of the lungs; but in many other respects, notably in the uro-genital organs, they have, in common with the higher vertebrata, preserved features which may have been disguised or lost in the perfecting of such modern and specialized fish as, for instance, the cod, salmon, or herring.

§ 2. Comparing the **general build** of a dog-fish with that of a rabbit, we notice the absence of a distinct neck, and the general conical form; the presence of a large tail, as considerable, at first, in diameter as the hind portion of the body, and of the first importance in progression, in which function the four paddle-shaped limbs, the lateral fins, simply co-operate with the median fin along the back for the purpose of steering; and, as a consequence of the size of the tail, we note also the ventral position of the apertures of the body. The anus, and urinary and genital ducts unite in one common

chamber, the **cloaca**. Behind the head, and in front of the fore fin (pectoral fin), are five gill slits (*g.s.*) leading from the pharynx to the exterior. Just behind the eye is a smaller and more dorsal opening of the same kind, the spiracle (*sp.*). On the under side of the head, in front of the mouth, is the nasal aperture (*olf.*), the opening of the nasal sac, which, unlike the corresponding organ of the air-frequenting vertebrata, has no internal narial opening. There is, however, a groove running from *olf.* to the corner of the mouth, and this, closing, in the vertebrate types that live in air and are exposed to incessant evaporation of their lubricating secretions, constitutes the primitive nasal passage. The limbs are undifferentiated into upper, lower, and digital portions, and are simply jointed, flattened expansions.

§ 3. The skin of the dog-fish is closely set with pointed tooth-like scales, the **placoid scales**, and these are continued over the lips into the mouth as teeth. Each scale consists of a base of true bone, with a little tubercle of a harder substance, *dentine*, capped by a still denser covering, the *enamel*. The enamel is derived from the outer layer of the embryonic dog-fish, the *epiblast*, which also gives rise to the epidermis; while the dentine and bony base arise in the underlying *mesoblast*, the dermis. A mammalian tooth has essentially the same structure: an outer coat of enamel, derived from epiblast, overlies a mass of dentine, resting on bone, but the dentine is excavated internally, to form a pulp-cavity containing blood-vessels and nerves. Most land animals, however, have teeth only in their mouths, and have lost altogether the external teeth which constitute the armour of the dog-fish. Besides the teeth there perhaps remain relics of the placoid scales in the anatomy of the higher vertebrata, in the *membrane bones*. How placoid scales may have given rise to these structures will be understood by considering such a bone as the vomer of the frog. This bone lies on the roof of the frog's mouth, and bears a number of denticles, and altogether there is a very strong resemblance in it to a number of placoid scales the bony bases of which have become confluent. In the salamander, behind the teeth-bearing vomers comes a similar toothed *parasphenoid* bone.

The same bone occurs in a corresponding position in the frog, but without teeth. In some tailed amphibians the vomers and splenials are known to arise by the fusion of small denticles. These facts seem to point to stages in the fusion of placoid bases, and their withdrawal from the surface to become incorporated with the cranial apparatus as membrane bones, a process entirely completed in the mammalian type.

§ 4. The **alimentary canal** of the dog-fish is a simple tube thrown into a Z shape. The *mouth* is rough with denticles, and has a fleshy, immovable tongue on its floor. In the position of the Eustachian tube there is a passage, the *spiracle* (*sp.*), running out to the exterior just external to the cartilage containing the ear. The *pharynx* communicates with the exterior through five gill slits (*g.s.*), and has, of course, no glottis or other lung opening. There is a wide *oesophagus* passing into a U-shaped stomach (*st.*), having, like the rabbit's, the spleen (*sp.*) on its outer curvature. There is no coiling small intestine, but the short portion receiving the bile duct (*b.d.*) and duct of the pancreas (*pan.*), is called the duodenum (*d'dum*). The liver has large left (*L.lv.*) and right lobes, and a median lobe (*M.lv.*), in which the gall bladder (*g.bl.*) is embedded. The next segment of the intestine is fusiform, containing a *spiral valve* (Fig. 4), the shelf of which points steeply forward; it is sometimes called the *colon* (*co.*). It is absorptive in function and probably represents morphologically, as it does physiologically, the greater portion of the small intestine. A rectal gland (*r.g.*) opens from the dorsal side into the final portion of the canal (*rectum*).

§ 5. The **circulation** presents, in many respects, an approximation to the state of affairs in the developing embryos of the higher types. The **heart** (Fig. 3, Sh. XVI.) is, roughly, Z shape, and transmits only venous blood. It lies in a cavity, the pericardial cavity (*P.c.c.*), cut off by a partition from the general coelom. At one point this partition is imperfect, and the two spaces communicate through a *peri-cardio-peritoneal* canal (*p.p.c.*), which is also indicated by an arrow (*p.p.*) in the position and direction in which the

student, when dissecting, should thrust his "seeker," in Figure 1, Sh. XV. A *sinus venosus* (*s.v.* in Fig. 3, Sh. XVI.) receives the venous trunks, and carries the blood through a valve into the baggy and transversely extended *atrium* (*au.*) whence it passes into the muscular *ventricle* (*Vn.*), and thence into the *truncus arteriosus*. This truncus consists of two parts: the first, the *conus* or *pylangium* (*c.a.*), muscular, contractile, and containing a series of valves; the second, the *bulbus* or *synangium* (*b.a.*), without valves and pulsatile. In the rabbit both sinus and truncus are absent, or merged in the adjacent parts of the heart.

§ 6. From the bulbus there branch, on either side, four **arterial trunks**, the first of which forks, so that altogether there are five *afferent branchials* (*a.br.*) taking blood to be aerated in the gills, here highly vascular filamentary outgrowths of the internal walls of the gill slits. There are altogether nine such vascular outgrowths (*demi-branchs*), one on each wall of each gill slit except the last, on the hind wall of which there is none. (In the spiracle is a miniature demi-branch, the *pseudo-branch*. This suggests that the spiracle is really a somewhat modified gill slit.) Four *efferent branchials* (*e.br.*) carry the aerated blood on to the *dorsal aorta* (*da.o.*). A *carotid artery* runs forward to the head, and a hypo-branchial artery supplies the ventral side of the pharyngeal region. There are *sub-elavian*, *coeliac*, *mesenteric*, and *pelvic* arteries, and the dorsal aorta is continued through the length of the tail as the *caudal artery* (*Cd.A.*).

§ 7. A caudal vein (*Cd.V.*), bringing blood back from the tail, splits behind the kidneys (*K.*), and forms the paired **renal portal** veins (*r.p.v.*), breaking up into a capillary system in the renal organ. A **portal vein** brings blood from the intestines to the liver.

§ 8. Instead of being tubular vessels, the chief veins of the dog-fish are, in many cases, irregular baggy sinuses. Three main **venous trunks** flow into the sinus venosus. In the median line from behind comes the *hepatic sinus* (*H.S.*); and laterally, from a dorsal direction, the *Cuvierian sinuses* (*C.S.*) enter it. These, as the student will presently perceive, are the equivalents of the rabbit's superior cavæ. They receive,

SHEET XV.

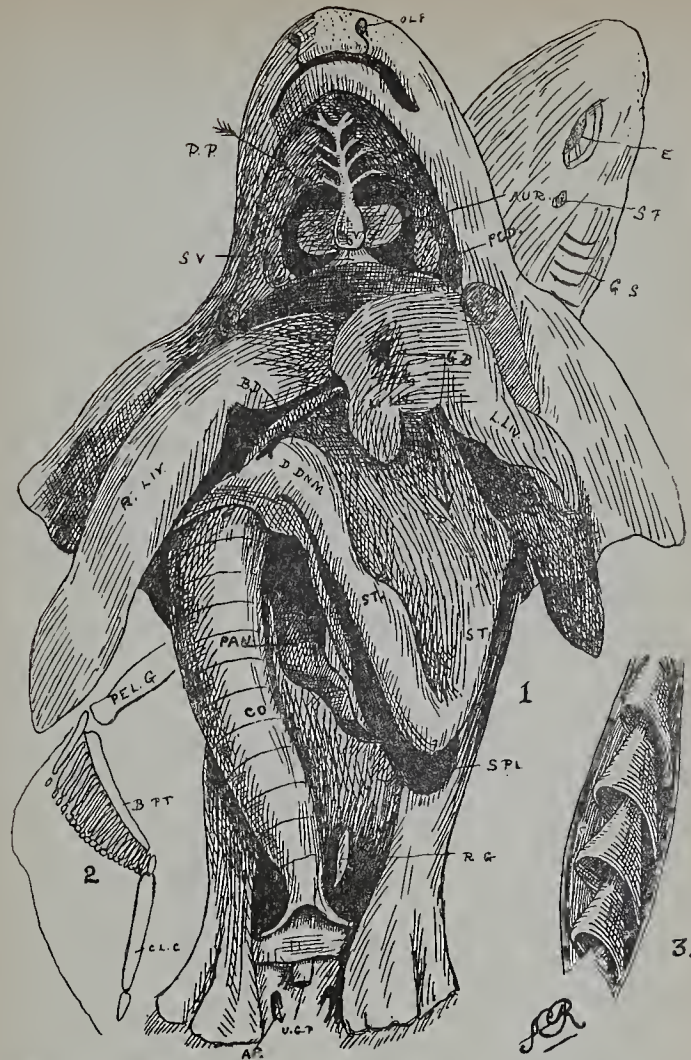
1. Dissection of Female Dog-Fish to show alimentary canal, the pericardium also being opened and the cloaca slit up. Above is also seen the dorsal view of the head.

2. The pelvic girdle and fin skeleton of a male.

3. The spiral valve in the colon.

a. p., abdominal pore.
aur., atrium of heart.
b. d., bile duct.
b. pt., basi-ptyergium.
cl. c., the supporting cartilage of the clasper.
co., colon.
d'dnm., duodenum.
e., the eye.
g. bl., gall bladder.
g. s., gill slits.
L. Liv., left lobe of liver.
M. Liv., middle lobe of liver.
olf., olfactory opening.

pan., pancreas.
pcd., pericardial wall.
pel. g., the pelvic girdle.
p. p., arrow through pericardio-peritoneal canal.
r. g., rectal gland.
R. Liv., right lobe.
sp., spiracle.
spl., spleen.
st., the stomach.
s. v., sinus venosus.
u. g. p., uro-genital pore.
v., ventricle.



near their confluence with the sinus venosus, the *inferior jugular vein* (*I.J.V.*). At their dorsal origin, they are formed by the meeting of the anterior (*A.C.S.*) and posterior (*P.C.S.*) *cardinal sinuses*. The anterior cardinal sinus lies along dorsal to the gill slits (*g.s.*), and receives an orbital sinus from the eye. The posterior cardinal sinus receives a sub-clavian vein (*s.c.v.*) and a lateral vein (*L.V.*) and fuses posteriorly with its fellow in the middle line. This median fusion is a departure from the normal fish type. It must not be confused with the inferior cava, which is not found in the dog-fish, the right posterior cardinal representing the rabbit's *azygos vein*. A simplified diagram of the circulation of a fish is given in Fig. 2, Sh. XVI., and this should be carefully compared with the corresponding small figure given of the vascular system of each of our other types.

The blood of the dog-fish resembles that of the frog.

§ 9. The internal **skeleton**, as we have said, is entirely cartilaginous, and only those parts which are pre-formed in cartilage in the skeletons of the higher types are represented here. The spinal column consists of two types of vertebrae, the *trunk*, bearing short, distinct, horizontally-projecting *ribs* (*r.*), and the *caudal*. The diagrams of Figure 5 (Sh. XVIII.) are to illustrate the structure of the centrum of a dog-fish vertebra; *C* is a side view, *D* a horizontal median section, *A* and *B* are transverse sections at the points indicated by *A* and *B* respectively in Figure *C*. The vertebrae are hollowed out both anteriorly and posteriorly (*amphi-coelous*), and a jelly-like notochord runs through the entire length of the vertebral column, being constricted at the centres of the centra, and dilated between them. The neural arch, above the centrum and containing the spinal cord, is made up of *neural plates* (*n.p.*) and *interneural plates* (*i.n.p.*), completed above by a median *neural spine* (*n.s.*). In the caudal region, instead of ribs projecting outwardly, there are *haemal processes*, inclined downwards and meeting below, forming an arch, the *haemal arch*, containing the caudal artery and vein—the vein ventral to the artery—and resembling the neural arch, which contains the spinal cord above, in shape and size.

§ 10. The **pectoral limb and girdle** (Fig. 4, Sh. XVI.)

have only a very vague resemblance to the corresponding structures in the rabbit. The girdle (*g.*) is a transverse bar lying ventral to the pericardial wall, and sending up a portion (*sc.*), dorsal to the attachment of the limb, which answers to the scapula and supra-scapula of the forms above the fish. Three main cartilages, named respectively the *pro-* (*p.p.*), *meso-* (*m.p.*), and *meta-pterygium*, form the base of the limb. With these, smaller cartilaginous plates, rods, and nodules articulate, and form a flattened skeletal support for the fin.

§ 11. The **pelvic girdle and limb** (Fig. 2, Sh. XV.) are similar in structure, but the pro-pterygium and meso-pterygium are absent, and the cartilage answering to the meta-pterygium goes by the name of the *basi-pterygium*. In the male, but not in the female, the pelvic fins are united behind the elaoaea, and there are two stiff grooved copulatory organs, the *claspers* (*cl.* in Fig. 1), which have a cartilaginous support (*cl.c.*). These claspers form the readiest means of determining the sex of a specimen before dissection.

§ 12. The **skull** consists of a cartilaginous cranium, and of jaw and visceral arches. The cranium persists throughout life, in what closely resembles a transitory embryonic condition of the higher types. There is a *nasal capsule* (*na.c.*), a brain case proper, and lateral *otic* (auditory) *capsules* (*ot.c.*) containing the internal ear. (This should be compared with the frog's embryonic skull.) The upper jaw has a great bar of cartilage, the *palato-pterygoid*, as its sole support; the arch of premaxilla, maxilla, jugal, and squamosal—all membrane bones—is, of course, not represented. In the frog this bar of cartilage is joined directly to the otic capsule by a quadrate portion, but this is only doubtfully represented in the dog-fish by a nodule of cartilage in the *pre-spiracular ligament* (*p.s.*). The lower jaw is supported by *Meckel's cartilage* (*M.C.*). The hyoid arch consists of two main masses of cartilage, the *hyomandibular* (*h.m.*), and the *ceratohyal* (*c.h.*); the former of these is tilted slightly forward, so that the gill slit between it and the jaw arch is obliterated below, and the cartilage comes to serve as the intermediary in the suspension of the jaw from the otic mass. There are five

SHEET XVI.

1. Circulation of the Dog-Fish.

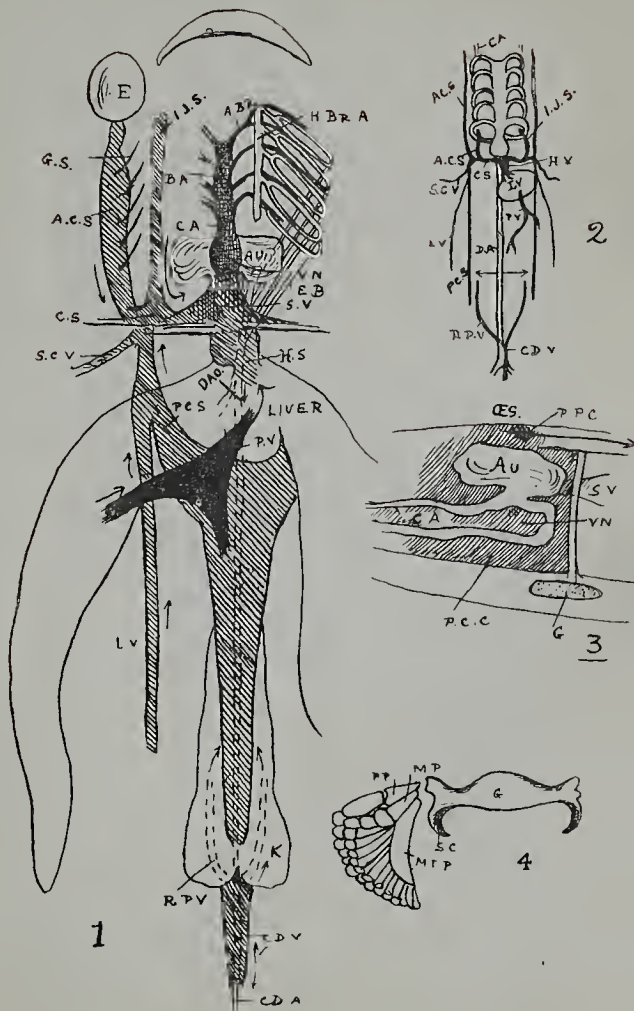
2. Shuplified and more typical fish circulation, in which the posterior cardinals have not coalesced in the median line. The Cuvierian veins = the vena cava superior of the higher type; the posterior cardinal is represented by the *azygos* vein in the Rabbit. Compare Sh. XXIV., 7, and Sh. II., 2.

3. Side view of the pericardium.

a. br., afferent branchial artery.
a. c. s., anterior cardinal sinus
 (= internal jugular vein).
au., atrium (= the two auricles
 of higher forms).
b. a., bulbus arteriosus.
c. a., conus arteriosus.
cd. a., caudal artery.
cd. v., caudal vein.
c. s., Cuvierian sinus.
d. a., dorsal aorta.
E., eye.
e. br., efferent branchial arteries.
g. s., in position of gill-slits.
h. br. a., hypobranchial artery.

H. S., hepatic sinus.
i. j. s., inferior jugular sinus
 (= external jugular vein).
K., kidney.
L. V., lateral vein.
a. s., ventral wall of oesophagus.
P. C. C., pericardial cavity.
P. C. S., posterior cardinal sinus.
p. p. c., pericardio-peritoneal
 canal.
P. V., portal vein.
r. p. v., reno-portal vein.
s. c. v., subclavian vein.
Vn., ventricle.

4. Skeleton of pectoral limb, and girdle.—*g.*, the girdle (also in Fig. 3). *sc.*, its dorsal portion. *m. p.*, meso-; *mt. p.*, meta-; *p. p.*, pro-, pterygium.



branchial arches, made up of *pharyngo-*, *epi-* and *cerato-branchials*, and the ventral elements fuse in the middle line to form a common plate of cartilage. Outside these arches are certain small cartilages, the *extra branchials* (*ex.b.*) which, together with certain small labials by the nostrils and at the sides of the gape, probably represent structures of considerably greater importance in that still more primitive fish, the lamprey. The deep groove figured lateral to the otic capsule is the connecting line of the orbital and anterior cardinal sinuses; the outline of the anterior cardinal sinus in this figure and in Figure 1 is roughly indicated by a dotted line.

§ 13. Figure 3*a* is a rough diagram of the internal ear—the only auditory structure of our type (cp. Rabbit, Sh. VII.). To dissect out the auditory labyrinth without injury is a difficult performance, but its structure may be made out very satisfactorily by paring away successive slices of the otic mass. Such a section is shown by Figure 3*b*; through the translucent hyaline cartilage the utriculus and horizontal canal can be darkly seen. The *ductus endolymphaticus* (*vide* Rabbit) is indicated by a dotted line in our figure. It is situated internal to the right-angle between the two vertical canals, and reaches to the surface of the otic capsule.

§ 14. The **brain** shows the three primary vesicles much more distinctly than do our higher types. The **fore-brain** has large laterally separated olfactory lobes (*rh.*), there are relatively small “hemispheres” (*pr.e.*), the stalk of the pineal gland tilts forward, and the gland itself is much nearer the surface, being embedded in the cartilage of the brain case, and the pituitary body is relatively very large, and has lateral *vaseular lobes* on either side. Following the usual interpretation of the parts, we find *optic lobes* (*op.l.*) as the roof of the mid-brain, and behind a very large, *median, hollow*, tongue-shaped *cerebellum* (*c.b.*). The medulla is large, and certain lateral *restiform tracts* (*r.t.*) therein, which also occur in the higher types, are here exceptionally conspicuous.

§ 15. The dog-fish has ten pairs of **cranial nerves**, corresponding to the anterior ten of the rabbit very closely, when

we allow for the modification the latter has suffered through the conversion of some part of the spiracular cleft to an eardrum, and the obliteration of the post-hyoid branchial slits.

The **first** and **second** nerves are really brain lobes, and nerves of the special senses of smell and sight respectively.

The **third** (*oculomotor*), the **fourth** (*patheticus*), and the **sixth** (*abducens*) are distributed to exactly the same muscles of the eyeball as they are in the rabbit.

The **fifth** nerve, has, in the dog-fish, as in the rabbit, three chief branches. V_2 and V_3 fork over the mouth just as they do in the mammal; V_1 passes out of the cranium by a separate and more dorsal opening, and runs along a groove along the dorsal internal wall of the orbit, immediately beneath a similar branch of VII., which is not distinct in the rabbit. The grooves are shown in the figure of the cranium, Sh. XVIII.; the joint nerve thus compounded of V. and VII. is called the *ophthalmic* (*oph.*). It is distributed to the skin above the nose and orbit. When the student commences to dissect the head of a dog-fish he notices over the dorsal surface of the snout an exudation of a yellowish jelly-like substance, and on removing the tough skin over this region and over the centre of the skull he finds, lying beneath it, a quantity of coiling simple tubuli full of such yellowish matter. These tubuli open on the surface by small pores, and the nerves terminate in hair-like extremities in their lining. These **sense tubes** are peculiar to aquatic forms; allied structures are found over the head and along a *lateral line* (see below) in the tadpole, but when the frog emerges from the water they are lost. They, doubtless, indicate some unknown sense entirely beyond our experience, and either only possible or only necessary when the animal is submerged.

In addition to the ophthalmic moiety mentioned above, the **seventh** nerve has a vidian branch (*vid.*) running over the roof of the mouth, and besides this its main branches fork over the spiracle, just as V. forks over the mouth, and as IX. and X. fork over gill clefts. This nerve in the rabbit is evidently considerably modified from this more primitive condition.

The **eighth** is the auditory nerve, as in the rabbit.

The **ninth** nerve forks over the first branchial cleft.

Black Narcissus. Deboach Ker.

David. Forer. Flora Robson.

Jassy Margaret Lockwood Dennis Price.

Master of Bankdam. Ian. Walls.

Anne Crawford. Dennis Price.

Stephen. Murray Linden. Graves.

Nine Gun Executioner. Kevin. Moore.

Julie. Gray. Christine Rorden.

Damning with Lime. Richard Attenborough

Bony K. Bones. Sheila. Sim.

Piccadilly Incident. Anna Neagle.

Michael. Wilding.

"While the Sun Shines". Ronald Howard.

Ronald. Lewis. Bonar Colleano.

Barbara. White. Elizabeth. Rutherford.

"Coram" Jean. Kent. Stewart. Granger

Anne. Crawford. Dennis Price.

"Henry V" Laurence. Olivier.

Emond. Knight. Rene. Ashley.

"Cleopatra and Cleopatra" Vivien Leigh

Claude Rains. Emond. Knight. Robt

Adams. Flora. Robson.

"Dear Murderer" Eric Portman
Greta Gynt. Hazel Court.
Andrew Crawford. Maxwell Reed.
"London Town" Sid Field. Greta Gynt
"Take My Life" Hugh Williams
Mavis Goring. Greta Gynt.
"Men of Two Worlds" Eric Portman
Robt. Adams Esaya. Mahumbi Phylis. Albert
Orlando. Martin.

~~"Black Narcissus"
Deborah Kerr David Farrar. John
Giles. Robert
"The Day After"
John Gielgud. Michael Redgrave. Henry
"The Day After Tomorrow"
John Gielgud. Michael Redgrave. Henry~~

The **tenth** nerve is easily exposed by cutting down through the body wall muscles over the gill clefts into the anterior cardinal sinus (*A.C.S.*). It gives off (*a*) branches forking over the posterior four gill slits, (*b*) a great *lateral nerve* running inward, and back through the body-wall muscle, and connected with a line of sense organs similar to those in the head, the **lateral line**, and (*c*) a *visceral nerve* curving round to the oesophagus and stomach. In dissection it becomes very evident that the tenth nerve is really a *leash* of nerves, each one equivalent to the ninth.

We may here call the attention of the reader to the fact of the singular resemblance of V., VII., IX., and the factors of X. That each has a ventral fork, we have already noticed. Each also (? IX.) has a dorsal constituent connected with the sense organs of the skin. The vidian branch of VII., however, is not evidently represented in the others.

§ 16. The **coelom** of the dog-fish is peculiar—among the types we treat of—in the possession of two direct communications with the exterior, in addition to the customary indirect way through the oviduct. These are the **abdominal pores** (*a.p.*) on either side of the cloaca in either sex. They can always be readily demonstrated by probing out *from the body cavity*, in the direction indicated by the arrow (*a.p.*) in Figure 1, Sh. XV. They probably serve to equalize the internal and external pressure of the fish as it changes its depth in the water, just as the Eustachian tubes equalize the pressure on either side of the mammal's tympanic membrane.

§ 17. The musculature of the dog-fish body is cut up into V-shaped segments, the point of the V being directed forward. The segments alternate with the vertebrae, and are called **myomeres**. Such a segmentation is evident, though less marked, in the body wall muscles of the frog, and in the abdominal musculature of the rabbit and other mammals it is still to be traced.

§ 18. The **uro-genital organs** of the female dog-fish (Fig. 1, Sh. XVII.) consist of an unpaired *ovary* (*ov.*), paired

oviducts (*o.d.*), enlarged at one point to form an *oviducal gland* (*o.d.g.*), *kidneys* (*k.*), with *ureters* (*ur.*) uniting to form a *urinary sinus* (*u.s.*) opening into the cloaca by a median *urinary papilla* separate from the oviducal openings. The eggs contain much yolk, and, like those of the fowl, are very large; like the fowl, too, one of the ovaries is suppressed, and it is the right ovary that alone remains. The two oviducts meet in front of the liver ventral to the oesophagus, and have there a common opening by which the ova are received after being shed into the body cavity. The eggs receive an oblong horny case in the oviduct; in the figure such a case is figured as distending the duct at *c.* The *testes* of the male (*T.* in Fig. 2) are partially confluent in the middle line. They communicate through *vasa efferentia* (*v.e.*) with the modified anterior part of the kidney, the *epididymis* (*ep.*), from which the *vas deferens* (*v.*) runs to the median uro-genital sinus (*u.g.s.*), into which the *ureters* (*ur.*) also open. The silvery peritoneum (lining of the body cavity) covers over the reddish kidneys, and hides them in dissection.

§ 19. Figure 3, Sh. XVII., is a generalized diagram of the uro-genital organs in the vertebrata; *M.L.* is the middle line of the body, *G.* is the genital organ, *Pr.* is the *pronephros*, or fore kidney, a structure which is never developed in the dog-fish, but which has functional importance in the tadpole and cod, and appears as a transitory rudiment in the eel. A duct, which is often spoken of as the *pronephric duct* (*p.d.*), and which we have figured under that name, is always developed. Anteriorly it opens into the body cavity. It is also called the Müllerian duct, and in the great majority of vertebrata it becomes the oviduct, uniting with its fellow, in the case of the dog-fish, ventral to the oesophagus. In the male it usually disappears; the uterus masculinus of the rabbit is still very generally regarded as a vestige of it. Kölliker has shown, however, that this interpretation is improbable. *Ms.* is the *mesonephros*, some or all of which becomes the *epididymis* in the male of types possessing that organ, and is connected with *G.* by the *vasa efferentia*. *Mt.*, the *metanephros*, is, in the frog, indistinguishably continuous with *Ms.*, and is the functional kidney, its duct (*metanephric duct*)

SHEET XVII.

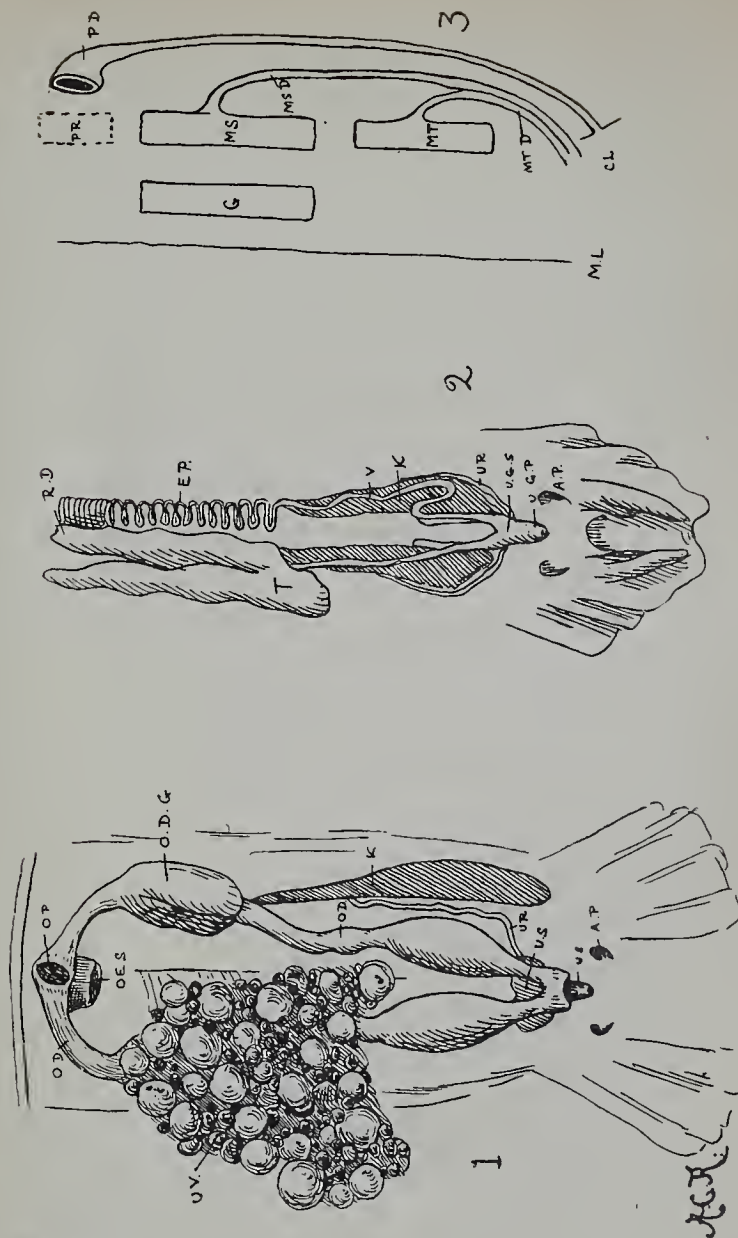
THE URO-GENITAL ORGANS OF THE DOG-FISH.

1. The Female, the oviduct of the left side cut away.

2. The Male.

The rectum is removed in both cases, and the silvery peritoneum dissected off from the kidneys.

3. A generalized diagram of the uro-genital organs. — All references in text. *Pr.*, the *pronephros*, is never developed in the Dog-fish; *P. d.*, its supposed duct, is the oviduct of the female, and is suppressed in the male. *Ms.*, the *mesonephros*, is the epididymis in the male, and is reduced in the female; *Ms. d.*, its duct, is the vas deferens in the male, and persists only as the urinary receptacle in the female. *Mt.* and *Mt. d.*, the *metanephros* and *metanephric duct*, become the functional kidney and ureter in both sexes. *G.* is the gonad (reproductive gland), and *M. L.* the animal's middle line (median plane).



being either undifferentiated from the *mesonephric* (as is the case with the frog) or largely split off from it, as in the dog-fish, to form the ureter.

§ 20. The correspondence of the male organs of the dog-fish with those of the rabbit, will be more evident if the student imagine—

- (a) the testes, vasa efferentia, and epididymis of each side to shift posteriorly until they reach a position on either side of the cloaca; and
- (b) The uro-genital apertures, instead of meeting dorsally and posteriorly to the anus, to shift round that opening and meet anteriorly and ventrically to it.

§ 21. This completes our survey of this type. Except where we have specified differences, the general plan of its anatomy follows the lines of the other vertebrate types described.

Questions on the Dog-Fish.

1. Describe the alimentary canal of the dog-fish, and compare it with that of the rabbit in detail.
2. Compare the coelom of the dog-fish and rabbit.
3. Draw diagrams to illustrate the course of the circulation in the dog-fish.
4. (*a*) Describe fully the heart of a dog-fish. (*b*) Compare it with that of a rabbit.
5. Give an account of the respiratory apparatus of the dog-fish.
6. Draw diagrams of a dog-fish vertebra, and compare the centrum with that of a rabbit.
7. Compare the vertebral column of the dog-fish and rabbit.
8. Draw diagrams of the limbs and limb-girdles of the dog-fish. Compare the pectoral with the pelvic fin.
9. Draw diagrams of (*a*) the male and (*b*) the female urogenital organs of the dog-fish. (*c*) Compare them carefully with those of the rabbit.
10. Compare the circulation in the kidney of dog-fish and rabbit.
11. Give an account of the cranio-facial apparatus of the dog-fish. State clearly what representation of this occurs in the frog and in the rabbit.
12. Give drawings (*a*) from above, (*b*) from the side, of the dog-fish brain.
13. State the origin and the distribution of the fifth, seventh, ninth, and tenth cranial nerves in the dog-fish.
14. Compare, one by one, the cranial nerves of the dog-fish with those of any higher vertebrate, as regards their origin and their distribution.
15. Describe the auditory organ of the dog-fish. What parts are added to this in the higher type?
16. Draw the cloaca (*a*) of a male, (*b*) a female dog-fish.
17. (*Practical.*) Demonstrate in a dog-fish the pathetic nerve, the opening between pericardium and coelom, the abdominal pores, and the ureter.

SHEET XVIII.

1. The Dog-Fish Brain, dorsal view.

2. Median section of the same. To the right a more diagrammatic figure.

The nerves are numbered:— BR_1 , BR_2 , BR_3 , BR_4 , branches of X forking over the second to the fifth gillslit. *cb.*, cerebellum. *h.s.c.*, horizontal semi-circular canal of ear, exposed by the slicing down of the otic mass. *LAT.*, lateral-line branch of X. *m.o.*, medulla oblongata. *oph.*, ophthalmic nerve ($V_1 + VII_1$). *op.l.*, optic lobe. *pit.*, pituitary body. *pr.c.*, prosencephalon (cerebral hemisphere). *rh.*, olfactory lobe (rhinencephalon). *r.t.*, restiform tracts of medulla. *S.P.G.*, stalk of the pineal gland. *th.c.*, thalamencephalon. *Vid.*, the Vidian, or palatine branch of VII. *Visc.*, visceral branch of X.

3. Diagram of the ear of a fish.

The structure of this is easily made out by clearing otic capsule and cutting slices of the cartilage in the Dog-Fish (*e.g.*, Fig. 1, *h.s.c.*). *a.v.c.*, *p.v.c.*, *h.s.c.*, anterior, posterior, and horizontal canals respectively. *amp.*, the ampullae. *d.e.*, the ductus endolymphaticus.

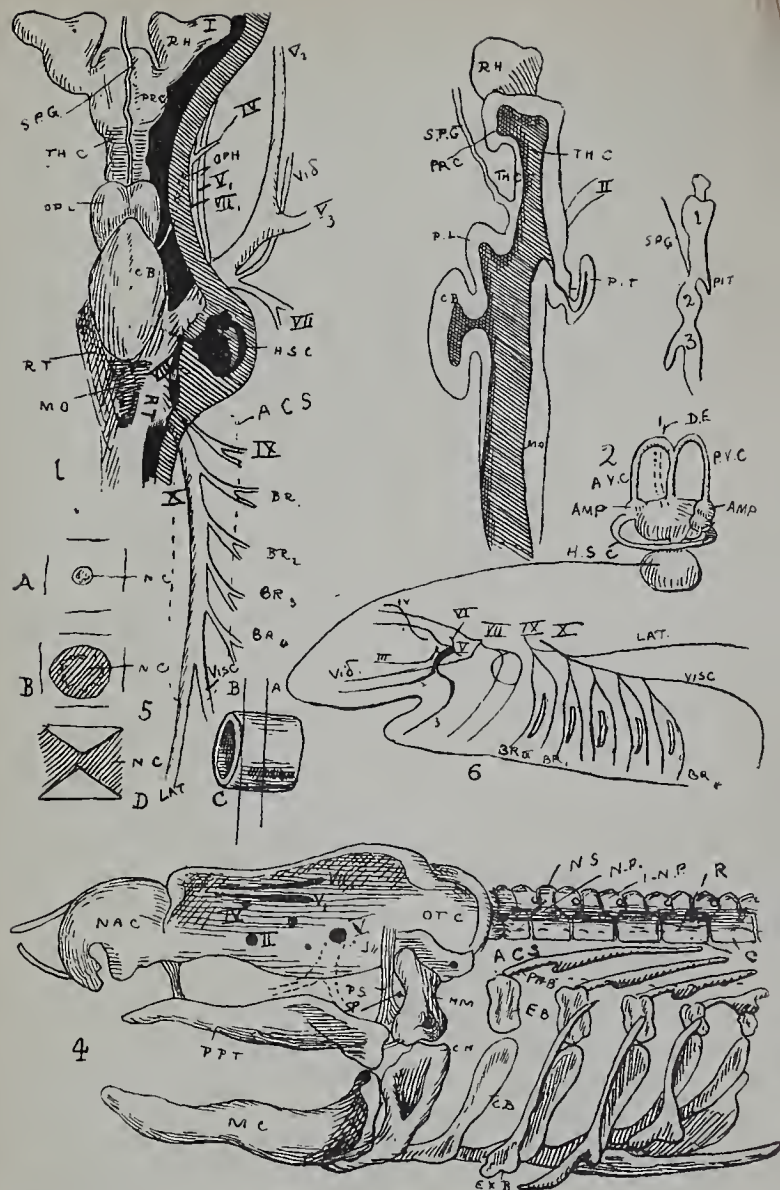
4. The cranium and branchial bars of a Dog-Fish.

A.C.S., position of the anterior cardinal sinus (dotted outline). *c.*, the vertebral centra. *c.b.*, the cerato-branchial. *c.h.*, the cerato-hyal. *e.b.*, the epi-branchial. *ex.b.*, extra-branchial. *h.M.*, the hyo-mandibular. *i.n.p.*, inter-neural plate. *M.C.*, Meckel's (lower jaw) bar. *Na.C.*, the nasal capsule. *n.p.*, neural plate. *n.s.*, neural spine. *Ot.C.*, the otic capsule. *ph.b.*, the pharyngo-branchial. *P.pt.*, the palato-pterygoid bar (upper jaw bar). *ps.*, pre-spiracular ligament, containing a cartilaginous nodule. *r.*, rib. *sp.*, the position of the spiracle. The groove in the otic capsule connects the orbital and anterior cardinal sinuses.

5. Diagrams of a vertebral centrum.—For reference letters. see text (§ 9).

6. Diagram for comparison with Fig. III., Sh. IX.

To face page 94.



SHEET XVIII.

AMPHIOXUS.

I. *Anatomy.*

§ 1. We find in *Amphioxus* the essential vertebrate features reduced to their simplest expression and, in addition, somewhat distorted. There are wide differences from that vertebrate plan with which the reader may now be considered familiar. There are no limbs. There is an unbroken fin along the median dorsal line and coming round along the ventral middle line for about half the animal's length. But two lowly vertebrates, the hag-fish and lamprey, have no limbs and a continuous fin. There is, as we shall see more clearly later, a structure, the respiratory *atrium*, not apparently represented in the true vertebrate types, at least in their adult stages. There is no distinct heart, only a debateable brain, quite without the typical division into three primary vesicles, no skull, no structures whatever of cartilage or bone, no genital *ducts*, no kidneys at all resembling those of the vertebrata, no pancreas, no spleen, apparently no sympathetic chain, no *paired* sense organs, eyes, ears, or nasal sacs, in all of which points we have striking differences from all true vertebrata; and such a characteristic vertebrate peculiarity as the pineal gland we can only say is represented very doubtfully by the eye spot.

§ 2. The vertebral column is devoid of vertebrae; it is throughout life a rod of gelatinous tissue, the **notochord** (Fig. 1, *n.e.*), surrounded by a cellular sheath. Such a rod is precursor to the vertebral column in the true vertebrates, but, except in such lowly forms as the lamprey, is usually replaced, partially (*e.g.*, dog-fish) or wholly (as in the rabbit) by *at first* cartilaginous vertebrae whose bodies are derived

from its sheath. Further, while in all true vertebrata the notochord of the developing young reaches anteriorly at most to the mid-brain, and is there at its termination enclosed by the middle portion of the skull, in *Amphioxus* it reaches far in front of the anterior extremity of the nervous system, to the end of the animal's body.* On this account the following classification is sometimes made of those animals which have a notochord :—

CHORDATA (= *Vertebrata*, as used by Lankester).

I. Having the notochord reaching in front of the brain.

Cephalochorda = *Amphioxus*.

II. Having the notochord reaching anteriorly to the mid-brain, a brain of three primary vesicles and a skull.

Craniata = all "true vertebrata": fishes, amphibia, reptiles, birds, and mammals (*Vertebrata* of Balfour).

III. Having the notochord confined to the tail.

Urochorda = the ascidians, or sea-squirts, certain forms of life only recently recognised as relatives of the vertebrata.

§ 3. Figure 1, Sh. XIX., shows the general anatomy of *Amphioxus*. We recognise five important points of resemblance to the earlier phases of the higher and the permanent structure of the lower members of the *vertebrata*, and it is these that justify the inclusion of *amphioxus* in this volume. In the first place there is the

NOTOCHORD.

In the next, just *above it* (at *s.c.*) we find

A DORSAL **Tubular** NERVOUS AXIS,

the spinal cord. Thirdly, the pharynx (*ph.*) is perforated by

RESPIRATORY SLITS,

* The anterior end of the notochord in the developing rabbit or dog lies where the middle of the basisphenoid bone is destined to be.

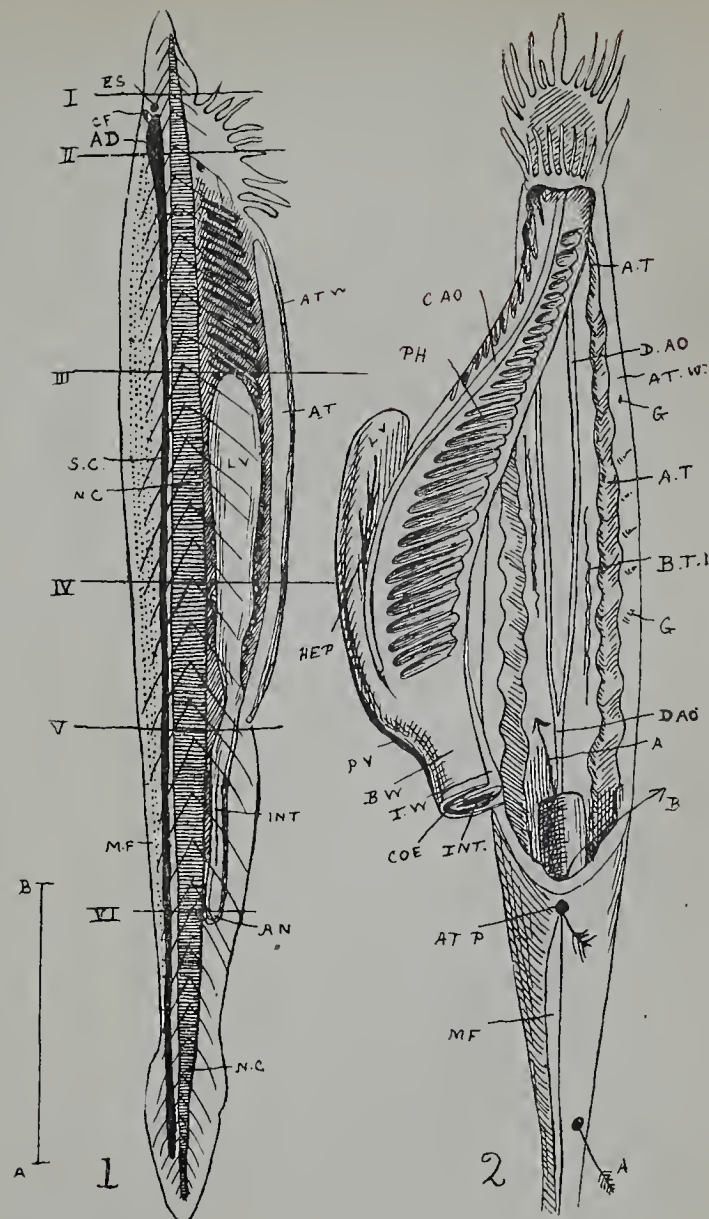
SHEET XIX.

1. Amphioxus, seen from the right side. *a—b* shows the natural size. The animal is supposed to be clarified, and mounted in some highly refracting medium, so that it is practically transparent; I., II., III., &c., refer to the sections figured on Sheet XX.

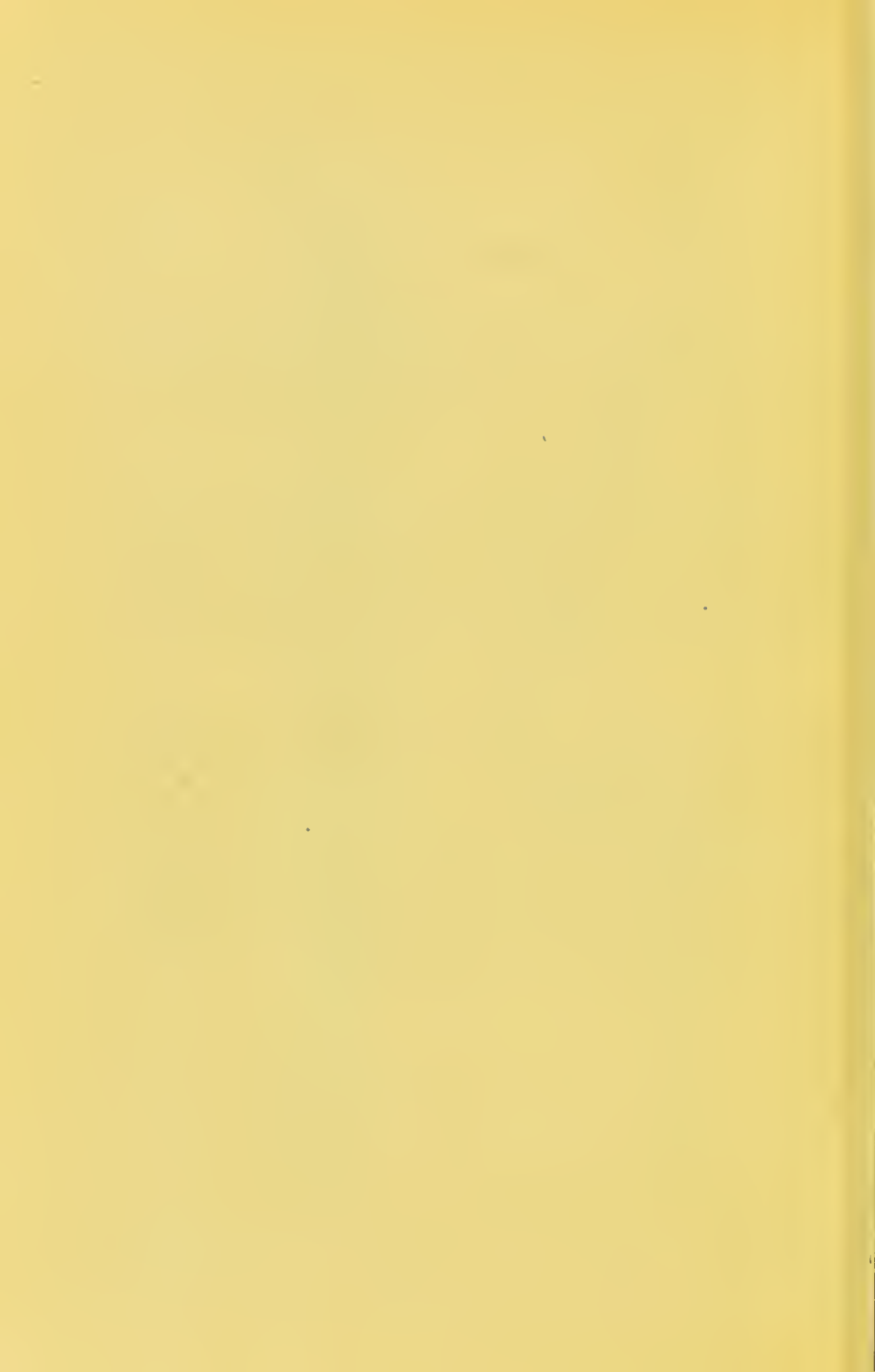
2. Amphioxus, General Dissection. (Slightly altered from a figure by Professor E. R. Lankester.) The ventral atrial wall is removed. The pharynx cut away from the dorsal body-wall, and with the true ventral body-wall turned over to the (animal's) right. The arrow *aa* passes through anus to intestine; *bb* is thrust through the atrial pore to the atrial cavity. Note *coe.*, the body cavity.

References to the two figures.

an., anus. *at.*, atrial cavity. *at. w.*, atrial wall. *at. p.*, atrial pore. *a. d.*, anterior dilatata of nervous system. *b. w.*, body-wall. *b. t. L.*, brown tubes of Lankester. *c. f.*, ciliated funnel. *coe.*, coelome. *c. ao.*, cardiac aorta. *d. ao.*, dorsal aorta (paired). *d. ao.*', dorsal aorta median. *g.*, gonads (male or female genital gland). *hep.*, hepatic vein. *int.*, intestine. *i. w.*, intestine wall. *lv.*, liver. *m. f.*, median fin. *n. c.*, notochord. *p. v.*, portal vein. *ph.*, pharynx. *e. s.*, pigment spot ("eye spot"). *s. c.*, spinal cord.



SHEET XIX.



though these, instead of being straight slashes, are modified from a U-shape slant very much forward and are much more numerous than in any true vertebrate. Fourthly, there is, as we shall see, a

VERTEBRATE TYPE OF CIRCULATION.

And finally the body-wall muscles are divided into

MYOMERES.

§ 4. The **alimentary canal** of *Amphioxus* commences with an "oral cavity," not represented in our vertebrata, surrounded by a number of *cirri*, or tentacles, supported by a horny substance which seems to be *chitin*, a common skeletal material among invertebrates. A *velum* (*v.*) forms a curtain, perforated by the mouth and by two smaller *hyoidean apertures*, between the oral cavity and the pharynx (*ph.*). "Pharynx" is here used in a wider sense than in the true vertebrata; it reaches back close to the liver, and is therefore equivalent to pharynx + oesophagus + a portion or all of the stomach. The so-called hyoidean apertures are not equivalent to the similarly-named parts of the vertebrata. Behind the pharynx the intestine (*int.*) runs straight out to the *anus* (*an.*), which opens not in the middle line, as one might expect, but in the left side! The liver lies usually on the creature's right, and, instead of being a compact gland, is simply bag-like.

§ 5. The **circulation** is peculiarly reduced (Fig. 2). The cardiac aorta (*c.ao.*) lies along the ventral side of the pharynx, and sends branches up along the complete bars between the gill slits. There is no heart, but the whole of the cardiac aorta is contractile, and at the bases of the aortic arches that run up the bars there are *contractile dilatations* that assist in the propulsion of the blood. Dorsal to the pharynx, as in fishes, there is a pair of *dorsal aortae* (*d.ao.*) that unite above the liver (compare the frog, for instance), and thence run backward as a median dorsal aorta (*d.ao.'*). A portal vein (*p.v.*) brings blood back from the intestine (and apparently from the whole posterior portion of the animal) to the liver. Thence hepatic veins (*hep.*) take it to the cardiac aorta.

§ 6. The **coelom**, or body cavity, of *Amphioxus* lies, of course, as in the vertebrata, between the intestinal wall and the body walls, and, just as in the vertebrata, it is largely reduced where gill slits occur. But matters are rather complicated by the presence of an **atrial cavity** round the pharynx, which is not certainly represented in the vertebrata, and which the student is at first apt to call the body cavity, although it is entirely distinct and different from that space. The mutual relation of the two will become apparent after a study of Figures 10, 11, 12 (Sh. XXI.). Figure 10 gives diagrammatically a section of a very young stage of *Amphioxus*; *P* is the pharynx portion of the alimentary canal, *coe.* is the coelom surrounding it at this stage here as elsewhere; *mt.c.* are certain lymph spaces, the *metapleural canals*, between which a small invagination (*i.e.*, a pushing-in), *at.*, of the outer epidermis occurs; *n.c.* is the notochord, and *s.c.* the spinal cord. The gill slits, by which *P.* communicates with the exterior, are not shown. Next Fig. 11 shows the invagination (*at.*) pushing its way in, and cut off from the exterior by a meeting of the body wall below. Note that *at.* is a portion of the animal's exterior thus embraced by its body, and that its lining is therefore of the same material as the external integument. In Figure 12, *at.* is developing upward, so that the true body hangs into it. Now imagine the gill slits perforated, as shown by the double-headed arrow in Figure 12. Figure 3, on Sh. XX., is a less diagrammatic representation of a cross-section of the pharyngeal region (*vide* Fig. 1, Sh. XIX.). The student should compare Figure 3, Sh. XX., and Figure 12, Sh. XXI. The atrium and metapleural canals are easily recognised in both. In Figure 3 the coelom is much cut up by the gill slits, and we have remaining of it (*a*) the *dorsal coelomic canals* (*d.c.c.*) and (*b*) the *branchial canals* (*br.c.*) in the bars between the slits. The atrial cavity remains open to the exterior at one point, the atrial pore (*at.p.*).

§ 7. The method of examining cross-sections is an extremely convenient one in the study of such a type as *Amphioxus*. The student should very carefully go over and copy the six sections on Sh. XX., comparing Figure 1 as he goes.

He should do this copying before reading what follows. One little matter must be borne in mind. These figures are merely intended to convey the great structural ideas, and they are considerably simplified: they must not be regarded as a substitute for the examination of microscopic sections. He will notice a number of rounded masses form the body wall. The muscles of *Amphioxus* are arranged in bundles bent sharply in an arrow shape, the point forward. These are called *myomeres*, and they are indicated in Figure 1 by lines pointing acutely forward. Several are consequently cut in any transverse section (Sheet XX.), and these are the rounded masses he sees. Similar *myomeres*, similarly situated, are found in fish, behind the head, and, less obviously, they occur with diminishing importance as the scale of the vertebrata is ascended.

§ 8. If we compare the **nervous system** of amphioxus with that of any vertebrate, we find at once a number of striking differences. In the first place, the skeletal covering of it, the cranium and the neural arches of vertebrae, are represented only by a greatly simplified connective tissue. In the next, a simple and slight anterior dilatation alone represents the brain. A patch of black pigment anterior to this (*e.s.*) may or may not be what its name implies, an *eyepspot*. There is a *ciliated funnel*, *c.f.* (Fig. 1, Sh. XIX.), opening *on the left side*, which has been assumed to be olfactory in its functions, and in the mouth chamber a *ciliated pit* (*c.p.*), which may, or may not, be an organ of taste. The ventral fissure of the spinal cord is absent. The dorsal nerves are without ganglia, and *do not come off in pairs*, but alternately, one to the left, then one to the right, one to the left, one to the right, and so on. The ventral nerves are very short, more numerous than the dorsal, and never unite with these latter to form mixed nerves.

The student will observe that here, just as in the case of the ciliated funnel and anus, the *Amphioxus* is **not strictly symmetrical**, but *twisted*, as it were, and so departs from the general rule of at least external bilateral symmetry obtaining among the vertebrates. It habitually lies on one

side in the mud of the sea bottom, and it is probable that this external asymmetry is due to this habit, so that too much classificatory importance must not be attached to it. The soles and other related fish, for instance, are twisted and asymmetrical, through a similar specific habit, to such an extent that both eyes lie on one side of the animal.

§ 9. No **kidney** on the vertebrate pattern is found, but the following structures have, among others, been suggested as renal organs:—

(a) Certain canals, the *brown tubes of Lankester* (*b.t.L.*, Fig. 2, Sh. XIX.), a pair of pigmented tubes opening into the atrium at the hind end of the pharynx, lying forward along by the dorsal coelomic canals, and having an internal opening also.

(b) Certain tubuli described by Weiss as situated in a series along the upper corners of the atrial cavity, and communicating, after the fashion of the “nephridia” of the earth-worm, with the coelom and with the exterior (or, rather, with that portion of the animal’s exterior enclosed in by the atrial wall; compare § 6).

(c) The general epithelial lining of the atrium.

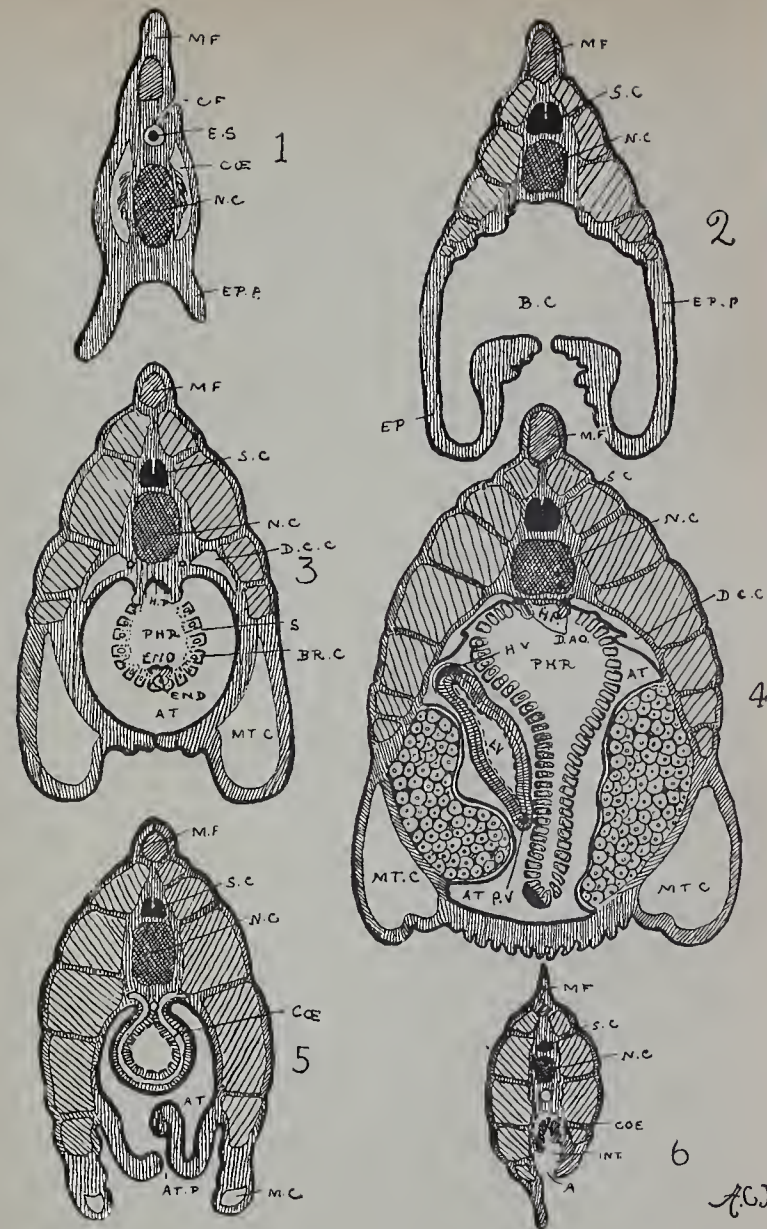
The **reproductive organs** (Fig. 4, Sh. XX., *g.*) are masses of cells situated in an isolated part of the coelom in the atrial folds, and, having no ducts, their contents must escape into the atrium by rupture of the body-wall. Thence they escape either by gill-slits, pharynx and mouth, or, more generally, through the atrial pore. The animals, like all the vertebrata, are dioecious, *i.e.*, male or female.

§ 10. The **endostyle** (*end.*), in Figs. 3 and 4, is a ciliated path or groove on the under side of the pharynx, which is generally supposed to represent the thyroid gland of vertebrates. The vertebrate thyroid, early in development, is certainly an open and long narrow groove in the ventral side of the pharynx. The **hyper-pharyngeal groove** (*h.p.*) has been in the past compared to the pituitary body, but there is little doubt now that this structure is represented by the ciliated pit.

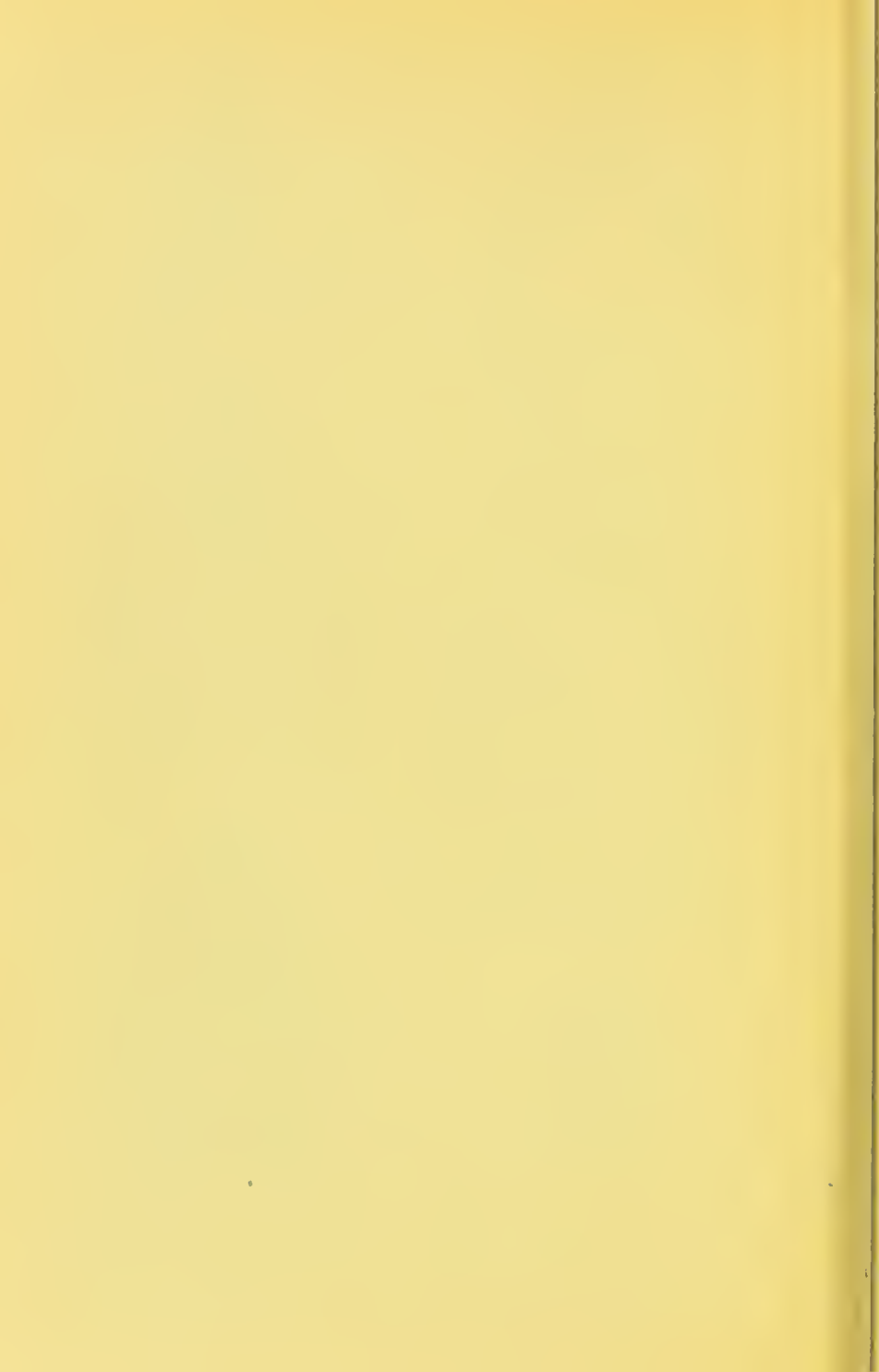
SHEET XX.

SECTIONS OF AMPHIOXUS.

The Roman numerals indicate the corresponding region in Figure 1, Sheet XIX. The lettering is identical; but note, in addition, *c. f.*, ciliated funnel, *e. s.*, eye spot, *o. c.*, oral cavity (or hood), *d. c. c.*, dorsal coelomic canal, *br. c.*, branchial canal, *h. p.*, hypopharyngeal groove, *end.*, endostyle, *epp.*, epipleur, and *h. vn.* for hepatic vein.



SHEET XX.



§ 11. The student is advised to revise this chapter before proceeding, and to schedule carefully the anatomical features under the headings of (i.) distinctly vertebrate characters, (ii.) characters contrasting with the normal vertebrate structure, (iii.) facts of doubtful import, with the suggestions given in the text written against them.

II.—*The Development of Amphioxus.*

§ 12. The development of amphioxus, studied completely, is at once one of the most alluring and difficult tasks in the way of the zoologist; but certain of its earlier and most obvious facts may very conveniently be taken into consideration now.

§ 13. The phenomena of the extrusion of polar bodies and fertilization are treated of later, and will, therefore, not be considered now. We will start our description with an egg-cell, which has escaped, of course, since there are no genital ducts, by rupture of the parent, has been fertilized by the male element, and is about to develop into a young amphioxus. It is simply a single cell, with some power of amoeboid motion, a single nucleus and nucleolus; and in amphioxus its protoplasm is clear and transparent. Frequently ova are loaded with granules of food store (yolk), which enable the young animal to go far with its development before it is hatched and has to begin feeding for itself. Such an ovum as that of our present type, however, being devoid of such yolk (*alecithal* = without yolk), necessitates a very early start in life, and, for reasons too complicated to state fully here, the development in such a case is considered particularly instructive and primitive by zoologists.

§ 14. The first thing to be seen in the developing cell is a deepening circular groove (Fig. 1, Sh. XXI.), which divides the ovum into two parts. Another groove then cuts at right angles to this, subdividing the two into four (Fig. 2). Another groove, at right angles to both the former, follows, making the four eight (Fig. 3). And so subdivision goes on. The whole process is called **segmentation** or **cleavage**.

§ 15. At the end of segmentation we get a *hollow* sphere of small cells, the cells separating from one another centrally and enclosing a cavity as the process proceeds. This is the **blastosphere**, shown diagrammatically in Figure 4,

and of which an internal view, rather truer to the facts of the case as regards shape, is given as Figure 5. The central cavity is the **segmentation cavity** (*s.e.*).

§ 16. **Invagination** follows (Fig. 6). In this process a portion of the blastosphere wall is tucked into the rest, as indicated by the arrow, so that a two-layered sack is formed. The space *ar.* is the *archenteron*, the primordial intestine, and its mouth is called the *blastopore* (*bp.*). The outer layer of this double-walled sac is called the *epiblast*. For the present we will give the inner lining no special term. The young amphioxus has, at this stage, which is called the **gastrula** stage, a curious parallelism with such a lowly form as the *Hydra* of our ditches. This latter creature, like the gastrula, consists essentially of two layers of cells, an outer protective and sensory layer, and an inner digestive one; it has a primordial intestine, or *archenteron*, and its mouth is sometimes regarded as being a *blastopore*. All animals that have little yolk, and start early in life for themselves, pass through a **gastrula** stage, substantially the same as this of amphioxus.

§ 17. The anus is perforated later near the region occupied at this stage by the blastopore. Hence the anterior end of the future amphioxus, the head end, is pointing towards the figure 6, and the letters *ep.* are marked on the side which will be dorsal.

§ 18. Figure 7 i. is a dorsal view of the gastrula at a somewhat later stage, and here indications of distinctly vertebrate relationships already appear. Figure 7 ii. is a cross-section, its position being shown by cross-lines in 7 i. and 6. Note first that the epiblast along the mid-dorsal line is sinking in to form what is called the **neural plate** (*n.p.*), and simultaneously on either side of it rise the neural folds (*n.f.*). Now, at Fig. 8, a slightly later stage is represented, and at 9 i. the inturned part is separated from the general external epiblast as the spinal cord. The remainder of the epiblast constitutes the epidermis.

§ 19. Reverting to Fig. 7 ii., along the dorsal side of the

archenteron a thickening of its wall appears, and is gradually pinched off from it to form a cellular rod, lying along under the nervous axis and above the intestine. This is the **notochord** (cp. Figs. 8 and 9).

§ 20. Finally, we note two series of buds of cells, one on either side of the archenteron in Fig. 7 ii. In 8 these buds have become hollow vesicles, growing out from it, the *coelomic pouches*. They are further developed in 9; and in 9 ii., which is a diagrammatic figure, they are indicated by dotted lines. They finally appear to (? entirely) obliterate the segmentation cavity—they certainly do so throughout the body; and their cavities are in time cut off from the *mesenteron*, by the gradual constriction of their openings. In this way the coelom (body cavity) arises as a series of hollow “archenteric” outgrowths, and *ms.* becomes the alimentary canal. *mt.c.*, the metapleural canals, probably arise subsequently to, and independently of, the general coelomic space, by a splitting in the body-wall substance.

§ 21. Hence, in considering the structure of amphioxus, we have three series of cells from which its tissues are developed :—

i. The **epiblast**.

ii. Walls of the coelomic pouches, which form (*a*) an inner lining to the epiblast, (*b*) an outer coating to the hypoblast, and (*c*) the mesentery (*m.*), by which the intestine is supported. This is the **mesoblast**.

iii. The lining of the mesenteron, or **hypoblast**.

From the epiblast the epidermis (not the dermis), the nervous system (including the nerves), and the sensory part of all sense organs are derived. From the mesoblast the muscles, the dermis, genital and excretory organs, circulatory fluid and apparatus, any skeletal structures, and all connective tissue are derived. The mass of the body is thus evidently made of mesoblast. The hypoblast is the *lining* of the intestine and of the glands which open into it; and the material of the notochord is also regarded as hypoblast.

§ 22. Fig. 9 ii. shows all the essential points of the structure of amphioxus. Epiblast is indicated by a line of dashes, mesoblast by dots, and hypoblast, dark or black. The true mouth is formed late by a tucking-in of epiblast, the *stomodaeum* (*s.d.*), which meets and fuses with the hypoblast, and is then perforated. The position of this mouth is at the velum. The formation of the atrium has been described. The metapleural folds run forward in front of the *velum*, as the *epipleurs* (*ep.* in Sections I. and II.), and form an *oral hood* (*b.c.*), around which the tentacles appear, and which is evidently not equivalent to the vertebrate mouth cavity, but in front of and outside it. The anus is formed by a tucking in, the *proctodaeum*, similar to the stomodaeum.

§ 23. The formation of the respiratory slits is complicated, and difficult to describe, but, since investigators have still to render its meaning apparent, it need not detain the elementary student.*

* See Balfour's *Embryology*, Vol. II., and *Q. J. M. S.* March, 1891.

Questions on Amphioxus.

1. Draw diagrams, with the parts named, of the alimentary canal of (*a*) amphioxus, (*b*) any craniate ; (*c*) indicate very shortly the principal structural differences between the two.
2. Describe, with a diagram, the circulation of amphioxus. Compare it with that of the craniata.
3. Draw from memory transverse sections of amphioxus (*a*) in the oral region, (*b*) through the pharynx, (*c*) just anterior, and (*d*) just posterior to atrial pore.
4. Describe fully the coelom of amphioxus, and compare it with that of the frog in regard to (*a*) development, (*b*) its relation to other organs in the adult.
5. Compare the atrial cavity and coelom of amphioxus. To what series of cavities in the frog are the metapleural canals to be compared ?
6. Describe the notochord of amphioxus, and point out its differences from the vertebrate notochord.
7. Describe, with diagrams, the nervous system of amphioxus, and compare its nervous axis, in detail, with that of a vertebrate.
8. Compare the genital organs of amphioxus with those of a higher vertebrate.
9. What structures have been regarded as renal organs in amphioxus ?
10. What is a gastrula ? With what lower type has the gastrula been compared ? Discuss the comparison.

SHEET XXI.

PHASES IN THE DEVELOPMENT OF AMPHIOXUS.

1, 2, 3, 4. Phases in segmentation.

5. The blastosphere.

6. The gastrula in section, anterior end to the right.

7. i. Dorsal view post gastrula stage.

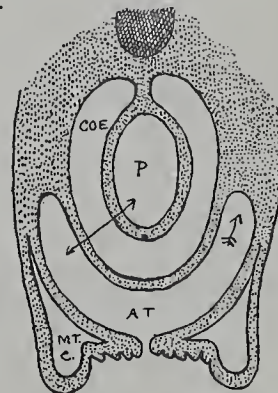
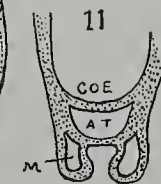
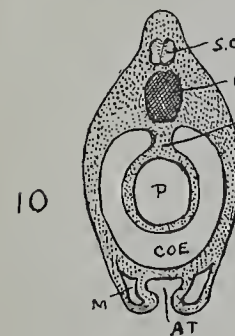
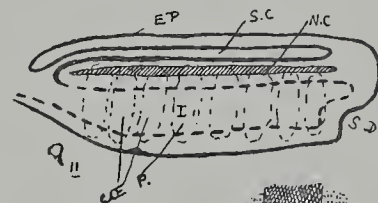
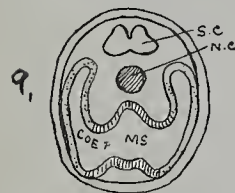
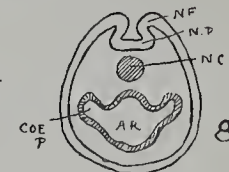
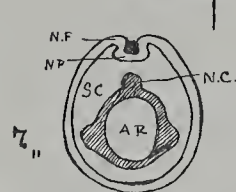
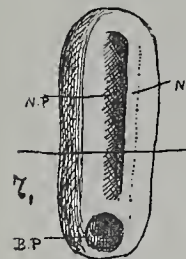
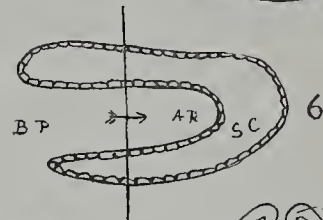
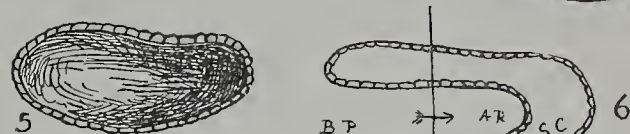
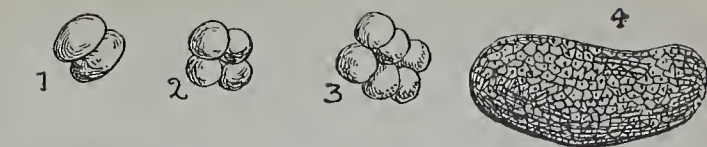
7. ii. Diagrammatic section of the same in the position indicated by the transverse line in 7, i.

8. Diagrammatic section of a later stage, *coe. p.*, the coelomic pouches. *n. c.*, the notochord. *n. p.*, the neural plate.

9. i. Still later section.

9. ii. Diagrammatic view of late embryo.

10, 11, 12. Figures to illustrate the formation of the atrium as a median ventral invagination, *at.*



DEVELOPMENT.

The Development of the Frog.

§ 1. We have now to consider how the body of the frog is built up out of the egg cell, but previously to doing so we must revert to the reproductive organs of our type.

§ 2. In the testes of the **male** is found an intricate network of tubuli, the lining of which is, of course, an epithelium. The cells of this epithelium have their internal borders differentiated into *spermatozoa*, which, at a subsequent stage, are liberated. A spermatozoon (Fig. 3, Sh. XIII., *sp.*) is a rod-shaped cell containing a nucleus; in fact, consisting chiefly of nucleus, with a tail, the flagellum, which is vibratile, and forces the spermatozoon forward by its lashing. The spermatozoa float in a fluid which is the joint product of the testes, anterior part of the kidney, and perhaps the prostatic glands.

§ 3. In the ovary, the **ova** are formed, and grow to a considerable size. They are nucleated cells, the nucleus going by the special name of the *germinal vesicle*, and the nucleolus the *germinal spot*. The ova prey upon the adjacent cells as they develop. The protoplasm of the ovum, except at that part of the surface where the germinal vesicle lies, is packed with a great amount of food material, the yolk granules. This yolk is non-living inert matter. An ovum such as this, in which the protoplasm is concentrated towards one pole, is called *telolecithal*.

§ 4. After the ovum has finished its growth, and elaborated the yolk within itself, a peculiar change occurs in the small area free from yolk—the *animal pole*, in which the germinal vesicle lies. This germinal vesicle divides, and one moiety is budded off from the ovum. The ovum has, in fact, under-

gone cell division into a very large cell containing most of its substance, and a small protoplasmic pimple surrounding half of its nucleus. The disproportion is so great between the two cells, that the phenomenon does not at first suggest the idea of cell division, and it is usually described as **the extrusion of the first polar body**. There follows a second and similar small cell, behind the first, the **second polar body**. Since the nucleus of the ovum has divided twice, it is evident that the nucleus remaining now in the ovum is a quarter of the original nucleus. Very little protoplasm is given off with the polar bodies; they play no further part in development, but simply drop off and disappear. Not only in the frog's ovum, but in all vertebrata, two polar bodies are given off in this way before the sexual process occurs. Their exact meaning has been widely discussed. It is fairly evident that some material is removed from the nucleus, which would be detrimental to further developments, and the point debated is what is the precise nature of this *excreted* material. This burning question we can scarcely deal with here.

§ 5. But here we may point out that in all cells the **function of the nucleus** appears to be to determine growth and division. It is the centre of directive energy in the cell.

§ 6. Fertilization is effected by a spermatozoon meeting with the ovum. It fuses with it, its nucleus becoming the *male pro-nucleus*. This and the female pro-nucleus, left after the extrusion of the polar cells, move towards each other, and unite to form the **first segmentation nucleus**.

§ 7. The ovum next begins to divide. A furrow cutting deeper and deeper divides it into two; another follows at right angles to this, making the two four, and another equatorial furrow cuts off the animal pole from the yolk or *vegetative pole*. (See Sh. XXII., Figs. 1, 2, and 3.) And so **segmentation** (= *cleavage*) proceeds, and, at last, a hollow sphere, the *blastosphere* (Fig. 4) is formed, with a segmentation cavity (*s.e.*). But, because of the presence of the yolk at the vegetative pole of ovum, and of the mechanical resistance it offers to the force of segmentation, the pro-

toplasm there is not nearly so finely divided—the cells, that is to say, are much larger than at the animal pole. The blastosphere of the frog is like what the blastosphere of amphioxus would be, if the future hypoblast cells were enormously larger through their protoplasm being diluted with yolk.

8. The next phase of development has an equally curious resemblance to and difference from what occurs in the case of the ova of animals which do not contain yolk. In such types (*e.g.*, amphioxus) a part of the blastosphere wall is tuckcd into the rest, and a gastrula formed by this process of invagination. In the frog (Fig. 5) there is a tuckcd-in, but the part that should lie *within* the gastrula, the yolk-containing cells, are far larger than the epiblast (*ep.*) which should form the outer layer of cells. Hence the *epiblast* can only by continual growth accommodate what it must embrace, and the process of tuckcd-in is accompanied by one of growth of the epiblast, as shown by the unbarbed arrow, over the yolk. This stage is called the gastrula stage; *ar.* is the cavity of the gastrula, the *archenteron*; *b.p.* is its opening or blastopore. Such a gastrula, formed mainly by overgrowth of the epiblast, is called an *epiblastic* gastrula, as distinguished from the *invaginate* gastrula of amphioxus. The difference is evidently entirely due to the presence of yolk, and the consequent modification of invagination in the former case.

§ 9. Comparing the two gastrulas, it is not difficult to see that if we imagine the *ventral* wall of the archenteron of amphioxus to have its cells enormously enlarged through the mixing of yolk with their protoplasm, we should have a gastrula essentially like that of the frog.

§ 10. Figure 6 shows a slightly later ovum than Figure 5, seen from the dorsal side. *b.p.* is the blastopore. In front of that appears a groove, the *neural groove*, bordered on either side by a ridge, the *neural fold* (*n.f.*). This is seen in section in Figure 7; *s.e.* is the neural groove; *n.f.*, as before, the neural fold. The neural folds ultimately bend over and meet above, so that *s.e.* becomes a canal, and is finally separated from the epiblast to form the spinal cord. Below the neural

groove a thickening of the dorsal wall of the archenteron appears, and is pinched off to form a longitudinal rod, the precursor of the vertebral column, the *notochord*, shown in Figure 7 (*n.c.*), as imperfectly pinched off.

§ 11. Simultaneously, on either side of the notochord appear a series of *solid* masses of cells, derived mainly by cell-division from the cells of the wall of the archenteron, and filling up and obliterating the segmentation cavity. These masses increase in number by the addition of fresh ones behind, during development, and are visible in the dorsal view as brick-like masses, the *mesoblastic somites* or *proto-vertebrae* (Fig. 6, i., ii., iii.). In Figure 7, these masses are indicated by dotting. In such a primitive type as *amphioxus* these mesoblastic masses contain a cavity, destined to be the future body cavity, from the first. In the frog, the cavity is not at first apparent; the mesoblast at first seems quite solid, but subsequently what is called the *splitting of the mesoblast* occurs, and the body cavity (*b.c.* in Fig. 7) appears. The outer mesoblast, lying immediately under the epiblast, constitutes the substance of the *somatopleur*, and from it will be formed the dermis, the muscles of the body wall, almost all the cartilage and bone of the skeleton, the substance of the limbs, the kidneys, genital organs, heart and blood-vessels, and, in short, everything between the dermis and the *coelom*, except the nervous system and nerves, and the notochord. The inner mesoblast, the mass of the *splanchnopleur*, will form the muscle and connective tissue of the wall of the alimentary canal, and the binding substance of the liver and other glands that open into the canal.

§ 12. Figure 8 is one which we reproduce, with the necessary changes in each plate of embryological figures given in this book, so that the student will find it a convenient one for the purpose of comparison. The lines of dashes, in all cases, signify *hypoblast*, the unbroken black line is *epiblast*, dotting shows *mesoblast*, and the shaded rod (*n.c.*) is the notochord. *c.s.* is the spinal cord; *br.*₁, *br.*₂, *br.*₃ are the three primary vesicles which constitute the brain, and which form fore, mid, and hind brain respectively. *I.* is the intestine

and Y. the yolk cells that at this early stage constitute its ventral wall.

§ 13. Figure 9 gives a similar diagram of a later stage, but here the blastopore is closed. An epiblastic tucking-in at *st.*, the *stomodaeum*, pre-figures the mouth; *pr.*, the *proctodaeum*, is a similar posterior invagination which will become the anus. Y., the yolk, is evidently much absorbed. Figure 10 is a young tadpole, seen from the side. The still unabsorbed yolk in the ventral wall of the mesentery gives the creature a big belly. Its mouth is suckorial at this stage, and behind it is a sucker (*s.*) by which the larvae attach themselves to floating reeds and wood, as shown by the three black figures below.

§ 14. We may now consider the development of the different organs slightly more in detail, though much of this has already been approached. The **nervous system**, before the closure of the neural groove, has three anterior dilatations, the fore-, mid-, and hind-brains, the first of which gives rise by hollow outgrowths to two pairs of lateral structures, the hemispheres and the optic vesicles. The latter give rise to the retina and optic nerve as described in § 40, p. 125.

§ 15. The hypoblastic *notochord* is early embraced by a mesoblastic sheath derived from the protovertebrae. This becomes truly cartilaginous, and at regular intervals is alternately thicker and thinner, compressing the notochord at the thicker parts. Hence the notochord has a beaded form within this, at first, continuous cartilaginous sheath. This sheath is soon cut into a series of vertebral bodies by jointings appearing through the points where the cartilage is thickest and the notochord most constricted. Hence what remains of the notochord lies *within* the vertebral bodies in the frog; while in a cartilaginous fish, such as the dog-fish, or in the embryonic rabbit, the lines of separation appear where the notochord is thickest, and it comes to lie *between* hollow-faced vertebrae. Cartilaginous neural arches and spines, formed outside the notochordal sheath, enclose the spinal cord in an arcade. The final phase is ossification. As the tadpole approaches

the frog stage the vertebral column in the tail is rapidly absorbed, and its vestiges appear in the adult as the urostyle.

§ 16. The development of the skull is entirely dissimilar to that of the vertebral column. It is shown on Figures 1 and 8, Sh. XIV.; and in the section devoted to the frog's skull a very complete account of the process is given. The process of ossification is described under the histology of the Rabbit.

§ 17. The origin of the **circulatory and respiratory organs** is of especial interest in the frog. In the tadpole we have essentially the necessities and organization of the fish; in the adult frog we have a clear exposition of the structure of pigeon and rabbit. The tadpole has, at first, a straight tubular heart, burrowed out in somatic mesoblast, and produced forward into a *truncus arteriosus*. From this arise four afferent branchial arteries, running up along the sides of the four branchial arches, and supplying gills. They unite above on either side in paired hyper-branchial arteries, which meet behind dorsal to the liver, to form a median dorsal aorta. Internal and external carotid arteries supply the head. These four afferent branchial arches are equivalent to the first four of the five vessels of the dogfish. At first, the paired gills are three in number, *external*, and treelike, covered by epiblast (Figs. 10 and 11, *e.g.*), and not to be compared to fish gills in structure, or in fact to any other gills within the limits of the vertebrata. Subsequently (hypoblastic) *internal gills* (*int.g.*, Fig. 12), strictly homologous with the gills of a fish, appear. Then a flap of skin outside the hyoid arch grows back to cover over the gills; this is the *operculum* (*op.* in Figs. 11 and 12, Sh. XXII.), and it finally encloses them in a *gill chamber*, open only by a pore on the left, which resembles in structure and physiological meaning, but differs evidently very widely in development, from the amphioxus atrium. At this time, the lungs are developing as paired hollow outgrowths on the ventral side of the throat (Fig. 12, *L.*). As the limbs develop, and the tail dwindles, the gill chamber is obliterated. The capillary interruptions of the gills on the branchial arches (*aortic arches*) are also obliterated. The *carotid gland* occupies the position of the first of these

in the adult. The front branchial arch here, as in all higher vertebrata, becomes the carotid arch; the lingual represents the base of a pre-branchial vessel; the second branchial becomes the aortic arch. The *fourth* loses its connection with the dorsal aorta, and sends a branch to the developing lung, which becomes the *pulmonary* artery. The third disappears. A somewhat different account to this is still found in some text-books of the fate of this third branchial arch. Balfour would appear to have been of opinion that it gave rise to the cutaneous artery, and that the third and fourth vessels coalesced to form the pulmo-cutaneous, the fourth arch moving forward so as to arise from the base of the third; and most elementary works follow him. This opinion was strengthened by the fact that in the higher types (reptiles, birds, and mammals) no fourth branchial arch was observed, and the apparent third becomes the pulmonary. But it has since been shown that a transitory third arch appears and disappears in these types.

§ 18. The origin of the **renal organ and duct** has very considerable controversial interest.* In Figure 13, Sh. XXII., a diagrammatic cross-section of an embryo is shown. *I.* is the intestine, *coe.* the coelom, *s.c.* the spinal cord; *n.c.* the notochord, surrounded by *n.s.*, the notochordal sheath. *ao.* is the dorsal aorta. In the masses of somatic mesoblast on either side, a longitudinal canal appears, which, in the torpedo, a fish related to the dog-fish, and in the rabbit, and possibly in all other cases, is epiblastic in origin. This is the **segmental duct**, which persists, apparently, as the Wolffian duct (*W.D.*). Ventral to this appears a parallel canal, the Müllerian duct (*M.D.*), which is often described as being split off from the segmental duct, but which is, very probably, an independent structure in the frog. A number of tubuli, at first metamERICALLY arranged, now appear, each opening, on the one hand, into

* In the discussion whether the vertebrata have arisen from, some ancestral type, like the earthworm, metamERICALLY segmented, and of fairly high organization, or from a much lower form, possibly even from a coelenterate. Such a discussion is entirely outside the scope of the book, though its mention is necessary to explain the importance given to these organs.

the coelom by a ciliated mouth, the *nephrostome* (*n.s.*), and on the other into the segmental duct. These tubuli are the *segmental tubes* or *nephridia*. There grows out from the aorta, towards each, a bunch of blood-vessels, the *glomerulus* (cp. § 62, Rabbit). These tubuli ultimately become, in part, the renal tubuli, so that the primitive kidney stretches, at first, along the length of the body cavity from the region of the gill-slits backward. The anterior part of the kidney, called the *pronephros*, disappears in the later larval stages. Internal to the kidney on either side there has appeared a longitudinal ridge, the genital ridge (*g.r.*), which gives rise to testes or ovary, as the case may be.

§ 19. The student should now compare the figures on Sh. XVII. In the male, tubular connections are established between the testes and the middle part of the primitive kidney (*mesonephros*). These connections are the *vasa efferentia* (*v.e.*), and the mesonephros is now equivalent to the epididymis of the rabbit. The Wolffian duct is the urogenital duct of the adult, and the Müllerian duct is entirely absorbed, or remains, more or less, in exceptional cases.

In the female, the Müllerian duct increases greatly in length—so that at sexual maturity its white coils appear thicker and longer than the intestine—and becomes the oviduct; the Wolffian duct is the ureter, and the mesonephros is not perverted in function from its primary renal duty.

§ 20. Tabulating these facts—

In the adult male:

Pronephros disappears.

The Müllerian duct (? = pronephric duct) disappears.

Mesonephros = Epididymis; its duct, the urogenital.

Metanephros and duct, not clearly marked off from Mesonephros. (Cp. Dogfish, § 19.)

In the adult female:

Pronephros disappears.

The Müllerian duct, the oviduct.

Mesonephros and Metanephros, the kidney, and their unseparated ducts, the ureters.

SHEET XXII.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE FROG.

These diagrams must be studied with the text. They should be compared with the corresponding ones of *Amphioxus* as indicated below.

1, 2, 3. Stages in segmentation (cp. 1, 2, 3 of *Amphioxus*).

4. Blastosphere stage (cp. 5, *Amphioxus*). This, on a smaller scale. The cells on the ventral side are so much larger because distended with yolk.

5. Gastrula stage in section (cp. 6, *Amphioxus*). The Frog on a smaller scale than *Amphioxus*.

6. Dorsal view of gastrula (cp. 7, *Amphioxus*).

7. Part of a transverse section of developing tadpole, corresponding to Figure 8 of *Amphioxus*.

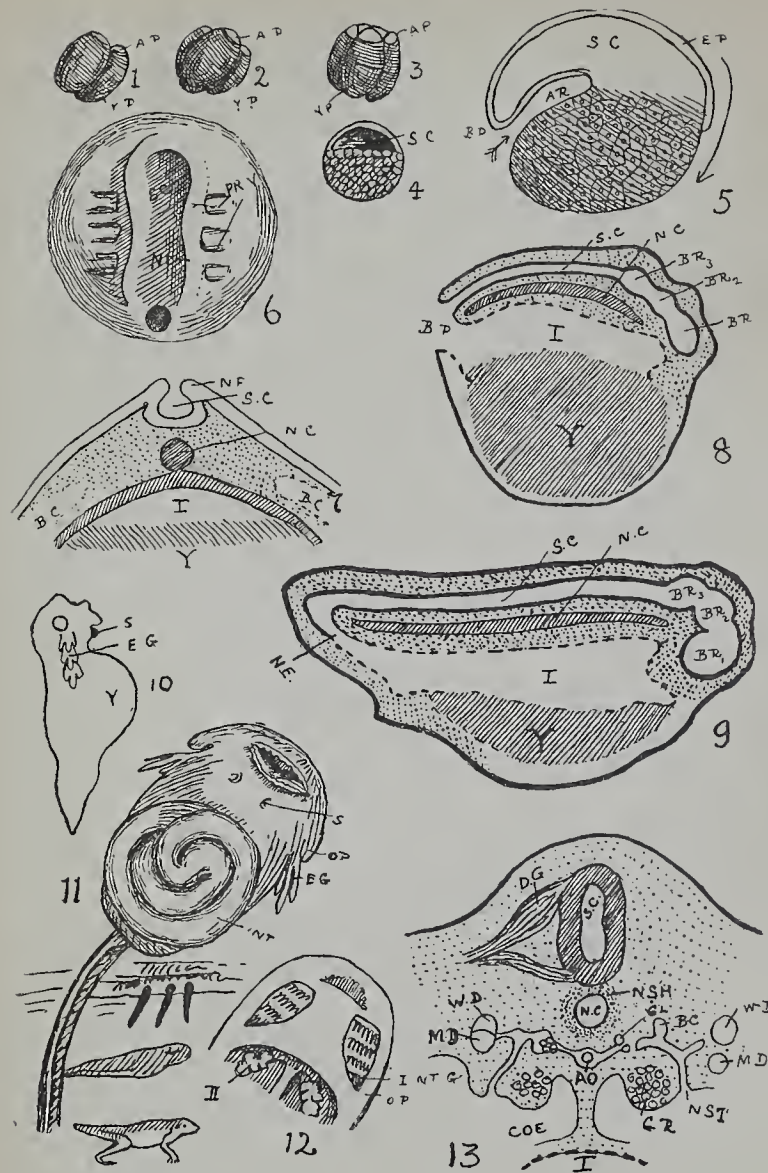
8 and 9. Diagrammatic longitudinal sections of tadpoles (cp. 9 ii. of *Amphioxus*). Y. represents a mass of yolk cells.

10. Side view of young tadpole, showing external gills (*e.g.*) and suckers (*s.*). Note the ventral bulging due to the yolk.

11. Ventral view of a later tadpole. *op.*, the operculum. *int.*, coiling intestine.

12. Head of still later tadpole in horizontal section to show atrial chamber formed by operculum. *int.g.*, internal gills; *L.*, developing lungs.

13. Diagrammatic cross-section of the mid-dorsal part of an embryonic vertebrate. *ao.*, aorta. *B.C.*, Bowman's capsule. *coe.*, coelom. *d.g.*, ganglion on dorsal root of spinal nerve. *gl.*, arteriole to form glomerulus. *g.r.*, genital ridge. *I.*, intestine. *M.D.*, Mullerian duct. *n.c.*, notochord. *n.sh.*, its sheath. *n.c.*, neurenteric canal. *nst.*, nephrostome. *s.c.*, neural canal. *W.D.*, Wolffian duct.



SHEET XXII.

§ 21. *Hermaphroditism* (*i.e.*, cases of common sex) is occasionally found among frogs; the testis produces ova in places, and the Müllerian duct is retained and functional. The ciliated nephrostomata remain open to a late stage of development in the frog, and in many amphibia throughout life. Their connection with the renal tubuli is, however, lost.

§ 22. The alimentary canal is, at first, a straight tube. Its disproportionate increase in length throws it into a spiral in the tadpole (*int.* Fig. 11), and accounts for its coiling in the frog. The liver and other digestive glands are first formed, like the lungs, as hollow outgrowths, and their lining is therefore hypoblastic. The greatest relative length of intestine is found in the tadpole, which, being a purely vegetable feeder, must needs effect the maximum amount of preparatory change in its food.

The Development of the Fowl.

§ 23. The frog has an ovum with a moderate allowance of yolk, but the quantity is only sufficient to start the little animal a part of its way towards the adult state. The fowl, on the contrary, has an enormous ovum, gorged excessively with yolk, and as a consequence the chick is almost perfected when it is hatched. The so-called yolk, the yellow of an egg, is the ovum proper; around that is a coating of white albumen, in a shell membrane and a shell. At either end of the yolk (Fig. 1, *y.*) twisted strands of albuminous matter, the *chalazae* (*ch.*) keep the yolk in place. The animal pole is a small grey protoplasmic area, the *germinal area* (*g.a.*), on the yolk.

§ 24. We pointed out that the presence of the yolk in the frog's egg led to a difference in the size of the cells at the animal and vegetable poles. The late F. M. Balfour, borrowing a mathematical technicality, suggested that the rate of segmentation in any part of an ovum varies inversely with the amount of yolk. In the fowl's egg, except just at the germinal area, the active protoplasm is at a minimum, the inert yolk at a maximum; the ratio of yolk to protoplasm is practically infinity, and the yolk therefore does not segment at all. The yolk has diluted the active protoplasm so much as to render its influence inappreciable. The germinal area segments, and lies upon the yolk which has defeated the efforts of its small mingling of protoplasm to divide. Such a type of segmentation in which only part of the ovum segments is called *meroblastic*. If we compare this with the typical *blastosphere* of the lower type, we see that it is, as it were, flattened out on the yolk. This stage is shown in section in the lower figure of Figure 1. *b.d.*, the **blastoderm**, is, from this point of view, a part of the ripped and flattened blastosphere, spread out on the yolk; *s.c.* is the segmentation cavity, and *y.* the yolk.

§ 25. There is no open invagination of an archenteron in

the fowl, as in the frog,—the gastrula, like the blastosphere, stage is also masked. But, in the hinder region of the germinal area, a thick mass of cells grows inward and forward, and, appearing in the dorsal view of the egg as a white streak, is called the **primitive streak** (*p.s.*). By a comparison of the figures of frog and fowl the student will easily perceive the complete correspondence of the position of this with the blastopore of the frog. The relation of the two will be easily understood if we compare the fowl's archenteron to a glove-finger under pressure—its cavity is obliterated—and the frog's to the glove-finger blown out. The tension of the protoplasm, straining over the enormous yolk, answers to the pressure. The gastrula in the fowl is solid. The primitive streak is, in fact, *the scar of a closed blastopore*. As we should expect from this view of its homology, at the primitive streak, the three embryonic layers are continuous and indistinguishable (Fig. 2). Elsewhere in the blastoderm they are distinctly separate. Just as the yolk cells of the frog form the ventral wall of the intestine, so nuclei appear along the upper side of the yolk of the fowl, where some protoplasm still exists, and give rise to the ventral hypoblastic cells. By conceiving a gradually increasing amount of yolk in the hypoblastic cells in the ventral side of the archenteron, the substantial identity of the gastrula stage in the three types, which at first appear so strikingly different, will be perceived. Carry Figures 4 and 5 of the frog one step further by increasing the size of the shaded yolk and leaving it unsegmented, and instead of *ar.* in 5 show a solid mass of cells, and the condition of things in the fowl would at once be rendered.

§ 26. Figure 3*a* of the fowl will conveniently serve for comparison with Figure 7 of the frog. The inturning of the medullary groove is entirely similar in the two cases. The mesoblast appears as solid mesoblastic somites. In the section above Figure 4 this layer is shown as having split into somatopleur (*so.*) and splanchnopleur (*spch.*). Figure 3 answers to Figure 6 of the frog, and Figure 4 is a later stage, in which the medullary groove is beginning to close at its middle part. The clear club-shaped area around

the embryo (*a.p.*) is the *area pellucida*; the larger area without this is the *area opaca* (*a.o.*), in which the first blood-vessels arise by a running together and a specialization of cells. The entire germinal area grows steadily at its edges to creep over and enlose the yolk.

§ 27. So far, the essential differences between the development of fowl and frog, the *meroblastic* segmentation, absence of a typical gastrula, and the primitive streak, seem comprehensible on the theory that such differences are due to the presence of an enormous amount of yolk. Another difference that appears later is that, while the tadpole has an efficient pronephros, the fowl, which has no larval (free imperfect) stages in its life history, has the merest indication of such a structure.

§ 28. Another striking contrast, due to, or connected with, this plethora of yolk, is the differentiation of a yolk sac (= **umbilical vesicle**) and the development of two new structures, the **amnion** and **allantois**, in the fowl. If the student will compare Figure 10 of the frog, he will see that the developing tadpole enloses in its abdomen all the yolk provided for it. This is a physical impossibility in the fowl. In the fowl (Fig. 2, Sh. XXIV.) the enormous yolk (*Y.*) lies outside of the embryo, and, as the cells of the germinal area grow slowly over it, *umbilical blood-vessels* are developed to absorb and carry the material to the embryo. In the case of an embryo sinking in upon, as it absorbs, this mass of nutritive material, a necessity for some respiratory structure is evident. From the hinder end of the fowl's intestine, in a position corresponding to the so-called urinary bladder of the frog, a solid outgrowth, the allantois, which speedily becomes hollow, appears. Early stages are shown in Figures 1 and 2, Sh. XXIV. (*al.*); while the same thing is shown more diagrammatically on Sh. XXIII., Figure 6 (*all.*). This becomes at last a great hollow sac, which is applied closely to the porous shell, and the extent of which will be appreciated by looking at Figure 5, Sh. XXIV., where the allantois is shaded. Allantoic blood-vessels ramify thickly over its walls, and aeration occurs through the permeable shell.

§ 29. The nature of the *amnion* will be understood by following Figures 4b, 5, and 6 on Sh. XXIII. The three embryonic layers are indicated by broken lines, dots, and black lines, just as they are in the frog diagrams. Not only is the embryo slowly pinched off from the yolk sac (*y.s.*), but, as the yolk is absorbed beneath it, and it grows in size, it sinks into the space thus made, the extra-embryonic somatopleur and epiblast rise up round it as two folds, which are seen closing in 5, and closed in 6, over the dorsal side of the young chick. In this way a cavity, *a*, lined by epiblast, and called the **amniotic cavity**, is formed. Dorsal to this, in 6, comes a space lined by somatic mesoblast, and continuous with *p.p.*, the pleuro-peritoneal cavity, or body cavity of the embryo. Outside this, again, is a layer, of somatopleur internally and epiblast externally, the *false amnion* (*f.a.*), which is continuous with the *serous membrane* (*s.m.*) enclosing the rest of the egg. The student should carefully copy these diagrams, with coloured pencils or inks for the different layers, and should compare them with the more realistic renderings of Figures 2, 5, and 8, Sh. XXIV.

§ 30. The heart in the fowl appears first as a *pair of vessels*, which unite to form a straight trunk in the median line, as the flattened-out embryo closes in from the yolk. The way in which this straight trunk is thrown, first of all, into the S shape of the fish heart, and then gradually assumes the adult form, is indicated roughly by Fig. 3. In one respect the development of the heart does not follow the lines one would expect. Since, between the fish and the higher form comes the condition of such an animal as the frog, in which the auricles are divided, while there is only one ventricle, we might expect a stage in which the developing chick's heart would have one ventricle, and a septum between the auricles. But, as a matter of fact, the ventricles in fowl and rabbit are separated first, and the separation of the auricles follows, and is barely complete at birth.

§ 31. Two *vitelline veins* from the yolk sac (*v.v.*) flow into the heart from behind, as shown in Figure 1. A later more complete and more diagrammatic figure of the circulation is

seen in Figure 7. At first there are two *anterior cardinal* (*a.c.*), and two *posterior cardinal veins* (*p.c.*) uniting to form Cuvierian sinuses (*c.s.*) that open into the heart just as in the dog-fish. But later the inferior cava is developed and extends backward, the posterior cardinals atrophy, the Cuvierian sinuses become the superior cavae, and the anterior cardinals the internal jugular veins. The vitelline veins (*v.v.*) flow, at first, uninterruptedly through the liver to the inferior cava, but, as development proceeds, a capillary system is established in the liver, and the through communication, the *ductus venosus*, is reduced—at last—completely. Bearing in mind that the yolk is outside the body in the fowl and inside it in the frog, the vitelline veins of the former have a considerable resemblance in position, and in their relation to the portal vein, to a portion of the single anterior abdominal vein. Blood is taken out to the allantois, however, by the arteries of the latter type.

§ 32. Five aortic arches are generally stated to appear altogether in the fowl, but not simultaneously. The first two, the mandibular and the hyoid vascular arches, early disappear, and are not comparable to any in the frog. The third is the first branchial arch, and, like the corresponding arch in the frog, forms the carotid artery; the second branchial is the aortic arch; and what has hitherto been regarded as the third (the *fifth* arch, *i.e.*) the pulmonary artery. A transitory arch, it is now known, however, appears between the second branchial and the last, and it is therefore the fourth branchial arch which is the pulmonary, just as it is in the frog.

§ 33. Blood, it may be mentioned, first appears in the *area vasculosa*, the outer portion of the *area opaca*. Embryonic cells send out processes, and so become multipolar; the processes of adjacent cells coalesce. The nucleus divides, and empty spaces appear in the substance of each of the cells.

In this way, the cavities of the smaller vessels and capillaries are formed, and the products of the internal divisions of the cells become the corpuscles within the vessels. The red blood corpuscles of the rabbit, it may be added, are *nucleated* for a considerable portion of embryonic life. Larger

SHEET XXIII.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE FOWL.

1. Diagram of the early ovum. The section below is a small portion of the blastodermic area. *b.d.*, blastoderm. *y.*, the undivided yolk. *s.c.*, the segmentation cavity between the blastoderm and yolk. Compare *s.c.* in XXII, 4.

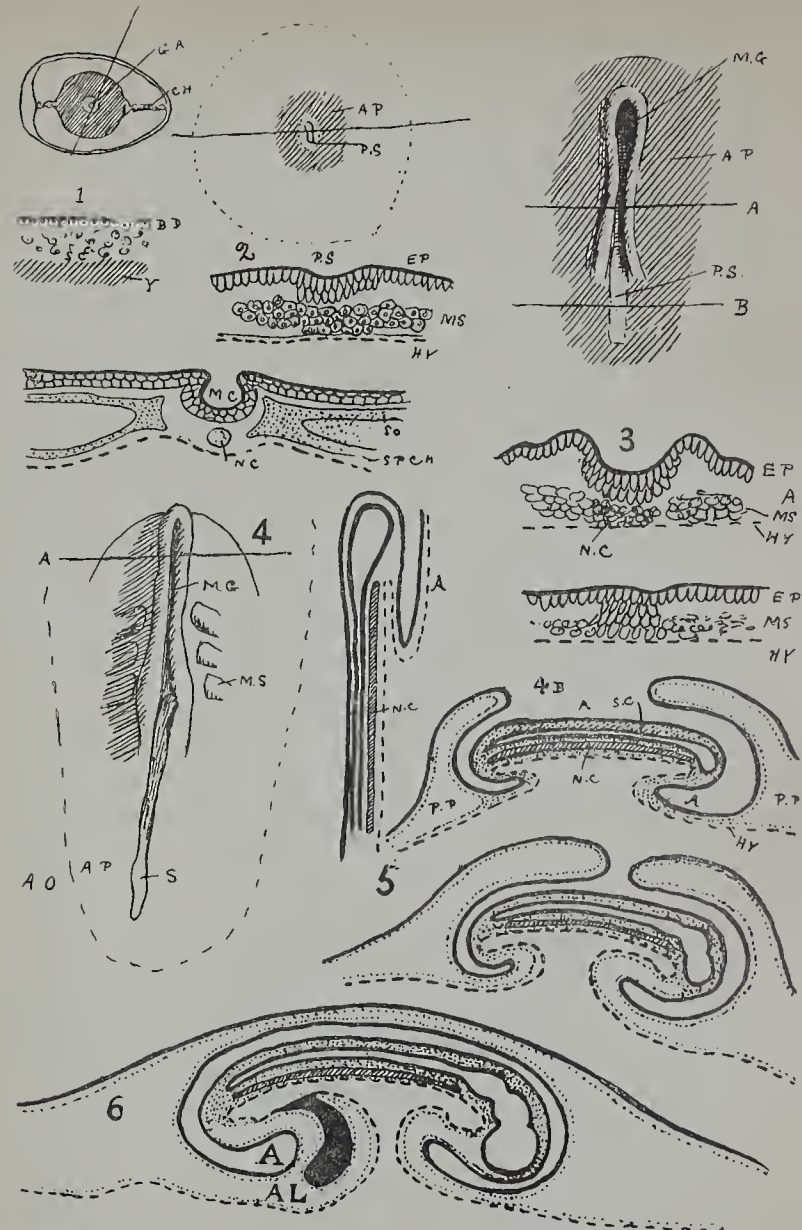
2. Area pellucida about the sixteenth hour. The figure below is the central part of the section indicated by the transverse line, and showing the primitive streak (*p.s.*).

3. Area pellucida about the twenty-first hour. Two sections through *a* and *b* below.

4. About the twenty-fifth hour, surface view; longitudinal section to right and transverse above.

4*b*. Diagrammatic rendering of same stage (cp. Fig. 9 of Frog and 9 ii. Amphioxus). This will be most clearly understood if the reader look at Sh. XXII, 9, and imagine *Y.* enormously increased, and the embryo sinking into it. Epiblast, *ep.*, black line. Mesoblast, dotted. Hypoblast, line of dashes. *pp.*, the pleuro-peritoneal cavity.

5 and 6 illustrate formation of amnion (*a.*) and allantois (*all.*), 6 is about the fourth day.



SHEET XXIII.

vessels and the heart are burrowed, as it were, out of masses of mesoblast cells. The course of the blood in the embryo is by the veins to the right auricle, *thence through the imperfection of the auricular septum already alluded to, into the left auricle*. Then the left ventricle, aortic arches (for the future pulmonary artery is in communication by a part presently blocked, the *ductus arteriosus*, with the systemic aorta), arteries, capillaries, veins. The liver capillary system and the pulmonary system only become inserted upon the circulation at a comparatively late stage.

§ 34. With the exception of the reduction of the pronephros, what has been said of the development of the frog's nervous system, renal and reproductive organs, and skeleton, applies sufficiently to the fowl for our present purposes. The entire separation of Wolffian and Müllerian ducts from the very beginning of development is here beyond all question (*vide* § 18). But the notochord in the fowl is not so distinctly connected with the hypoblast, and so distinct from the mesoblast, as it is in the lower type, and no gills, internal or external, are ever developed. The gill *slits* occur with a modification due to the slitting and flattening out of the embryo, already insisted upon; for, whereas in the tadpole they may be described as perforations, in the fowl they appear as four notches between ingrowing processes that are endeavouring to meet in the middle line.

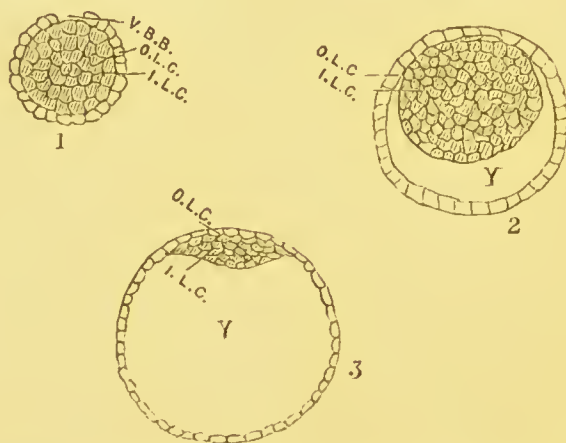
The Development of the Rabbit.

§ 35. The early development of the rabbit is apt to puzzle students a little at first. We have an ovum practically free from yolk (*alecithal*), and, therefore, we find it dividing completely and almost equally. We naturally assume, from what we have learnt, that the next stages will be the formation of a hollow blastosphere, invagination, a gastrula forming mesoblast by hollow outgrowths from the archenteron, and so on. There is no yolk here to substitute epiboly (§ 9) for invagination, nor to obliterate the archenteron and the blastopore through its pressure.

Yet none of these things we have anticipated occur !

We find *solid* mesoblastic somites, we find primitive streak, allantois and amnion, features we have just been explaining as the consequence of an excess of yolk in the egg. We even find a yolk sac with no yolk in it.

§ 36. A solid mass of cells is formed at the beginning, called a *morula*, Figure 1. In this we are able to distinguish rather smaller **outer layer cells** (*o.l.c.*), and rather larger **inner layer cells** (*i.l.c.*), but these cells, in their later



development, do not answer at all to the two primitive layers

of the gastrula, and the name of *Van Beneden's blastopore* (*V.B.b.*), for a point where the outer layer of cells is incomplete over the inner, only commemorates the authorship of a misnomer. The uniformity, or agreement, in the development of our other vertebrate types is apparently departed from here.

§ 37. As the egg develops, however, we are astonished to find an increasing resemblance to that of the fowl. A split occurs at one point between outer layer and inner layer cells, and the space resulting (*Y* in Fig. 2) is filled by an increasing amount of fluid, and rapidly enlarges, so that presently we have the state of affairs shown in 3, in which the inner layer cells are gathered together at one point on the surface of the ovum, and constitute the germinal area. If, with Hubrecht, we regard the outer layer cells as an egg membrane, there is a curious parallelism between this egg and the fowl's, the fluid *Y* representing the yolk, and the inner layer cells the cells of the fowl's germinal area.

At any rate, the subsequent development goes far to justify such a view. The inner cells split into epi-, meso-, and hypo-blast, like the blastoderm in the fowl; there is a primitive streak and no blastopore; an amnion arises; the yolk sac, small and full of serous fluid, is cut off just as the enormous yolk of the fowl is cut off; and an allantois arises in the same way. There is no need to give special diagrams—Figures 3, 4*b*, 5, and 6 of the fowl will do in all respects, except proportion, for the development of the rabbit. The differences are such as we may account for, not on the supposition that the rabbit's ovum never had any yolk, but that an abundant yolk has been withdrawn from it. The nutrition of the embryo by yolk has been superseded by some better method. The supposition that the rabbit is descended from ancestors which, like the birds and reptiles, laid eggs with huge quantities of yolk, meets every circumstance of the case.

§ 38. But the allantois and yolk sac of the rabbit, though they correspond in development, differ entirely in function from the similar organs of the fowl. The yolk sac is of the

very smallest nutritive value; instead of being the sole source of food, its contents scarcely avail the young rabbit at all as nourishment. Its presence in development is difficult to account for except on the supposition that it was once of far greater importance. At an early stage, the outgrowing allantois, pushing in front of it the serous membrane, is closely applied to the lining of the mother's uterus. The maternal uterus and the embryonic allantois send out finger-like processes into each other which interlock, and the tissue between the abundant blood-vessels in them thins down to such an extent that nutritive material, peptones and carbohydrates, and oxygen also, diffuse freely through it from mother to *foetus*,* and carbon dioxide, water, and urea from the *foetus* to the mother. The structure thus formed by the union of the wall of the maternal uterus, allantois, and the intermediate structures is called the **placenta**. Through its intermediation, the young rabbit becomes, as it were, rooted and *parasitic* on the mother, and utilizes her organs for its own alimentation, respiration, and excretion. It gives off CO_2 , H_2O , and urea, by the placenta, and it receives O and elaborated food material through the same organ. This is the better method that has superseded the yolk.

§ 39. In its later development, the general facts already enunciated with regard to the organs of frog and fowl hold, and where frog and fowl are stated to differ, the rabbit follows the fowl. In the circulation the left fourth vascular arch (second branchial) gives rise to the aortic arch; in the right the corresponding arch disappears, except so much of it as remains as the innominate artery. The azygos vein (Ch. III.) is derived from the right posterior cardinal sinus. Both pulmonary arteries in the rabbit are derived from the *left* sixth vascular arch (= fourth branchial). Cp. § 32. The allantois altogether disappears in the adult fowl; in the adult mammal a portion of its hollow stalk remains as the urinary bladder, and the point where it left the body is marked by the *umbilicus* or *navel*. The umbilical arteries become the small hypogastric arteries on

* The embryo.

either side of the urinary bladder. There is no trace of a pronephros at all in the rabbit.

§ 40. We may note here the development of the eye. This is shown in Figure 4, Sh. XXIV. A hollow cup-shaped vesicle from the brain grows out towards an at first hollow cellular ingrowth from the epidermis. The cavity within the wall of the cup derived from the brain is obliterated, and the stalk withers, the cup becomes the retina, and thence fibres grow back to the brain to form the optic nerve. The cellular ingrowth is the lens. The remainder of the eye-structures are of mesoblastic origin, except the superficial epithelium of the cornea. The retinal cup is not complete at first along the ventral line, so that the rim of the cup, viewed as in Fig. 1, *r*, is horseshoe shape. In all other sense organs, as, for instance, the olfactory sacs and the ears, the percipient epithelium is derived from the epiblast directly, and not indirectly through the nervous system. These remarks apply to all vertebrate types.

§ 41. The supposition that the general characters of the rabbit's ovum were stamped upon it as an heritage from a period when the ancestors of the mammals were egg-laying reptiles, is strengthened by the fact that the two lowest and most reptile-like of all the mammalia, the duck-billed platypus and the echidna, have been shown to depart from the distinctive mammalian character, and to lay eggs. And, in further confirmation of this supposition, we find, in tracing the mammals and reptiles back through the geological record, that in the Permian and Triassic rocks there occur central forms which combine, in a most remarkable way, reptilian and mammalian characteristics.

§ 42. In conclusion, we would earnestly recommend the student to *see* more of embryological fact than what is given him here. It is seeing and thinking, much more than reading, which will enable him to clothe the bare terms and phrases of embryology with coherent knowledge. In Howes' *Atlas of Biology* there is a much fuller series of figures of the frog's development than can be given here, and they are

drawn by an abler hand than mine can pretend to be. There is also an *Atlas d'Embryologie*, by Mathias Duval, that makes the study of the fowl's development entertaining and altogether delightful. Such complete series as these are, from the nature of the case, impossible with the rabbit. Many students who take up the subject of biology do so only as an accessory to more extended work in other departments of science. To such, practical work in embryology is either altogether impossible, or only possibly to a very limited extent. The time it will consume is much greater, and the intellectual result is likely to be far less than the study of such plates as we have named.

SHEET XXIV.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE FOWL.

1. Chick about the third day. *al.*, the allantois. *i.*, the intestine. *u. v.*, the yolk sac. *v. v.*, the vitelline veins. At this stage the chick lies on its left side in the yolk. For lettering of blood vessels, see (7) below.

2. Chick about sixth day.

3. Development of heart.

4. Development of the eye. *B.*, brain. *L.*, lens. *R.*, retina.

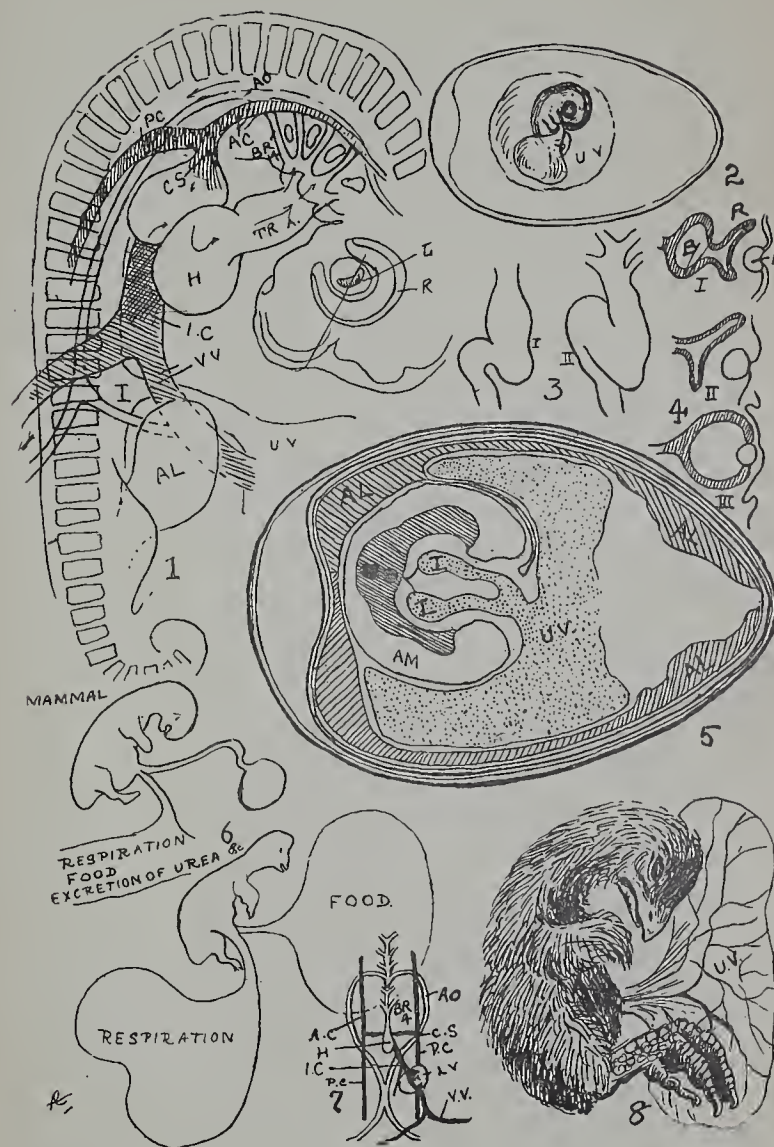
5. Chick about the sixteenth day. *AM.* is the amnion surrounding the embryo. Note particularly how the allantois (*al.*) has spread over surface of shell and how the yolk sac is shrivelled.

6. Figures to illustrate the relative function and importance of allantois and yolk sac in bird and mammal. In the fowl, however, the blood-vessels of the allantois also probably absorb the *albumen* of the egg, and may excrete urea into the egg-space.

7. Simplified figure of the embryonic circulation, for comparison with the similar figures annexed to Dog-fish and Rabbit.

A. C., anterior cardinal. *Ao.*, Aorta. *Br.*, sixth aortic arch (fourth branchial). *C. S.*, Cuvierian sinus. *H.*, the heart. *I. C.*, inferior cava. *P. C.*, posterior cardinal vein. *Tr. A.*, truncus arteriosus. *v. v.*, vitelline vein.

8. Chick on the nineteenth day.





V.—*The Theory of Evolution.*

§ 43. We have now considered our types, both from the standpoint of adult anatomy and from embryological data; and we have seen through the vertebrate series a common structure underlying wide diversity in external appearance and detailed anatomy. We have seen a certain intermediate-ness of structure in the frog, as compared with the rabbit and dog-fish, notably in the skull and skeleton, in the circulation, in the ear, and in the reduced myomeres; and we have seen that the rabbit passes in these respects, and in others, through dog-fish- and frog-like stages in its development, and this alone would be quite sufficient to suggest that the similarities of structure are due to other causes than a primordial adaptation to certain conditions of life.

§ 44. It has been suggested by very excellent people that these resemblances are due to some unexplained necessity of adherence to *type*, as though the power that they assume created these animals originally, as they are now, coupled creative ability with a plentiful lack of ideas, and so perforce repeated itself with impotent variations. On the other hand, we have the supposition that these are “family likenesses,” and the marks of a *common ancestry*. This is the opinion now accepted by all zoologists of repute.

§ 45. It must not be for a moment imagined that it is implied that rabbits are descended from frogs, or frogs from dog-fish, but that these three forms are remote cousins, derived from some ancient and far simpler progenitor. But since both rabbit and frog pass through phases like the adult condition of the dog-fish, it seems probable that the dog-fish has remained more like the primordial form than these two, and similarly, the frog than the rabbit.

§ 46. Hence we may infer that the mammals were the last

of the three groups, of which we have taken types, to appear upon the earth, and that the fishes preceded the amphibia. Workers in an entirely independent province, that of palaeontology, completely endorse this supposition. The first Vertebrata to appear in the fossil history of the world are fishes; fish spines and *placoid scales* (ep. dog-fish) appear in the Ordovician rocks. In the coal measures come the amphibia; and in the Permo-triassic strata, reptile-like mammals. In the Devonian rocks, which come between the Silurian and the coal measures, we find very plentiful remains of certain fish called the *dipnoi*, of which group three genera still survive; they display, in numberless features of their anatomy, transitional characters between true fish and amphibia. Similarly, in the Permian come mammal-like reptiles, that point also downward to the amphibia. We find, therefore, the story told by the ovum written also in the rocks.

§ 47. Now, when this fact of a common ancestry is considered, it becomes necessary to explain how this gradual change of animal forms may have been brought about.

§ 48. Two subcontrary propositions hold of the young of any animal. It resembles in many points its parent. It differs in many points from its parent. The general scheme of structure and the greater lines of feature are parental, inherited; there are also novel and unique details that mark the individual. The first fact is the law of **inheritance**; the second, of **variation**.

§ 49. Now the parent or parents, since they live and breed, must be more or less, but sufficiently, adapted to their conditions of living—more or less fitted to the needs of life. The *variation* in the young animal will be one of three kinds: it will fit the animal still better to the conditions under which its kind live, or it will be a change for the worse, or it is possible to imagine that the variation—as in the colour variations of domesticated cats—will affect its prospects in life very little. In the first case, the probability is that the new animal will get on in life, and breed, and multiply above

the average; in the second, it is probable that, in the competition for food and other amenities of life, the disadvantage, whatever it is, under which the animal suffers will shorten its career, and abbreviate the tale of its offspring; while, in the third case, an average career may be expected. Hence, disregarding accidents, which may be eliminated from the problem by taking many cases, there is a continual tendency among the members of a species of animals in favour of the proportionate increase of the individuals most completely adapted to the conditions under which the species lives. That is, while the conditions remain unchanged, the animals, considered as one group, are continually more highly perfected to live under those conditions. And under changed conditions the specific form will also change.

§ 50. The idea of this process of change may be perhaps rendered more vivid by giving an imaginary concrete instance of its working. In the jungles of India, which preserve a state of things which has existed for immemorial years, we find the tiger, his stripes simulating jungle reeds, his noiseless approach learnt from nature in countless millions of lessons of success and failure, his perfectly powerful claws and execution methods; and, living in the same jungle, and with *him* as one of the conditions of life, are small deer, alert, swift, light of build, inconspicuous of colour, sharp of hearing, keen-eyed, keen-scented—because any downward variation from these attributes means swift and certain death. To capture the deer is a condition of the tiger's life, to escape the tiger a condition of the deer's; and they play a great contest under these conditions, with life as the stake. The most alert deer almost always escape; the least so, perish.

§ 51. But conditions may alter. For instance, while most of these deer still live in the jungle with tigers, over a considerable area of their habitat, some change may be at work that thins the jungle, destroys the tigers in it, and brings in, let us say, wolves, as an enemy to the deer, instead of tigers. Now, against the wolves, which do not creep, but hunt noisily, and which do not spring suddenly upon prey, but follow by scent, and run it down in packs, keen eyes, sharp

ears, acute perceptions, will be far less important than endurance in running. The deer, under the new conditions, will need coarser and more powerful limbs, and a larger chest; it will be an advantage to be rough and big, instead of frail and inconspicuous, and the ears and eyes need not be so large. The old refinements will mean weakness and death; any variation along the line of size and coarseness will be advantageous. Slight and delicate deer will be continually being killed, rougher and stronger deer continually escaping. And so gradually, under the new circumstances, if they are not sufficient to exterminate the species, the finer characteristics will be eliminated, and a new variety of our old jungle deer will arise, and, if the separation and contrast of the conditions is sufficiently great and permanent, we may, at last, in the course of ages, get a new kind of deer specifically different in its limbs, body, sense organs, colour, and instincts, from the deer that live in the jungle. And these latter will, on their side, be still continually more perfected to the jungle life they are leading.

§ 52. Take a wider range of time and vaster changes of condition than this, and it becomes possible to imagine how the social cattle—with their united front against an enemy, fierce onslaught, and their general adaptation to prairie life—have differentiated from the ancestors of the slight and timid deer; how the patient camel, with his storage hump, water storage, and feet padded against hot sand, has been moulded by the necessity of desert life from the same ancestral form. And so we may work back, and link these forms, and other purely vegetarian feeders, with remoter cousins, the ancestral hogs. Working in this way, we presently get a glimpse of a possible yet remoter connection of all these hoofed and mainly vegetarian animals, with certain “central types” that carry us across to the omnivorous, and, in some cases, almost entirely vegetarian bears, and to the great and prosperous family of clawed meat-eaters. And thus we elucidate, at last, a thread of blood relationship between the, at present, strongly contrasted and antagonistic deer and tiger, and passing thence into still wider generalizations, it would be possible to connect the rabbit

playing in the sunshine, with the frog in the ditch, the dog-fish in the sea-waters and the lancelet in the sand. For the transition from dog-fish to rabbit differs from the transition from one species of deer to another only in magnitude : it is an affair of vast epochs instead merely of thousands of years.

§ 53. It would, however, be beyond the design of this book to carry our demonstration of the credibility of a common ancestry of animals still further back. But we may point out here that it is not a theory, based merely upon one set of facts, but one singularly rich in confirmation. We can construct, on purely anatomical grounds, a theoretical pedigree. Now the independent study of embryology suggests exactly the same pedigree, and the entirely independent testimony of palaeontology is precisely in harmony with the already confirmed theory arrived at in this way.

§ 54. It is in the demonstration of this wonderful unity in life, only the more confirmed the more exhaustive our analysis becomes, that the educational value and human interest of biology chiefly lies. In the place of disconnected species of animals, arbitrarily created, and a belief in the settled inexplicable, the student finds an enlightening realization of uniform and active causes beneath an apparent diversity. And the world is not made and dead like a cardboard model or a child's toy, but a living equilibrium ; and every day and every hour, every living thing is being weighed in the balance and found sufficient or wanting.

Our little book is the merest beginning in zoology ; we have stated one or two groups of facts and made one or two suggestions. The great things of the science of Darwin, Huxley, Wallace, and Balfour remain mainly untold. In the book of nature there are written, for instance, the triumphs of survival, the tragedy of death and extinction, the tragi-comedy of degradation and inheritance, the gruesome lesson of parasitism, and the political satire of colonial organisms. Zoology is, indeed, a philosophy and a literature to those who can read its symbols. In the contemplation

of beauty of form and of mechanical beauty, and in the intellectual delight of tracing and elucidating relationships and criticising appearances, there is also for many a great reward in zoological study. With an increasing knowledge of the facts of the form of life, there gradually appears to the student the realization of an entire unity shaped out by their countless, and often beautiful, diversity. And at last, in the place of the manifoldness of a fair or a marine store, the student of biology perceives the infinite variety of one consistent and comprehensive Being—a realization to which no other study leads him at present so surely.

To the student who feels inclined to amplify this brief outline of Vertebrate Anatomy, we may mention the following books: Wiedersheim's and Parker's *Vertebrates*, Huxley's *Anatomy of the Vertebrata*, Flower's *Osteology of the Mammalia*, Wallace's *Distribution*, Nicholson and Lydeker's *Palaeontology* (Vol. II.), the summaries in Rolleston's *Forms of Animal Life* (where a bibliography will be found), and Balfour's *Embryology*. But reading without practical work is a dull and unprofitable method of study.

Questions on Embryology.

[All these questions were actually set at London University Examinations.]

1. Describe the changes in the egg-cell which precede fertilization; describe the process of fertilization and the formation of the primary cell-layers, as exhibited in three of the animal types known to you. What is the notochord, and how is it developed in the frog?

2. Describe the early stages in the development of the egg of the fowl as far as the closure of the neural groove. How do you account for the primitive streak?

3. Describe the cleavage and the surface appearances of the egg of the frog and of the rabbit, up to the time when the first gill-slits appear in the embryo. Give illustrative diagrams of what you describe.

4. Describe the structure and cleavage of the ovum (*a*) of the frog, (*b*) of the fowl, and (*c*) of the rabbit. (*d*) Explain as far as possible the differences in the cleavage of these three eggs. (*e*) Point out how the embryo is nourished in each case, and (*f*) describe the constitution of the placenta in the rabbit.

5. (*a*) What are the protovertebrae? (*b*) How does the notochord originate in the frog? (*c*) How are the vertebrae laid down in the tadpole? (*d*) Describe the vertebral column of the adult frog. (*e*) In what important respects do the centra of the vertebrae of the frog, the dog-fish, and the rabbit differ from one another?

6. Give an account of the more important features in the development of the frog.

7. What temporary organs are developed in the embryo frog which are absent from the embryo bird and mammal, and what in the two latter which are absent from the former?

8. Draw diagrams, with the parts named, of the heart and great arteries of the frog, giving descriptions only in so far as is necessary to explain your diagrams; trace the development of these structures in the tadpole; point out particularly in which of the embryonic visceral (branchial) arches the great arteries of the adult run.

9. Trace the history of the post-oral gill-slits and their accompanying cartilaginous bars and vascular arches in the frog, fowl, and rabbit.

10. Give a short account, with illustrative figures, of the mode of formation of the primary germinal layers in amphioxus and in the frog. What explanation can you give of the differences between the two cases?

11. Give a short account, with diagrammatic figures, of the principal changes which occur in the circulatory and respiratory organs during the metamorphosis of the tadpole into the frog.

12. How do protozoa differ from higher animals (metazoa) as regards (*a*) structure, (*b*) reproduction? Compare the process of fission in an amoeba with the segmentation of the ovum in amphioxus, pointing out the resemblances and differences between the two cases.

Miscellaneous Questions.

[Most of these questions were actually set at the Biological Examinations of London University.]

1. Describe (*a*) the digestive, (*b*) the circulatory, (*c*) the excretory, and (*d*) the reproductive organs of the amphioxus.

2. Describe the stomach and intestines of the dog-fish and rabbit, and point out in what way their differences are connected with diet.

3. Describe the mechanism of respiration in the adult frog, and contrast it with that of the tadpole.

4. Give an account of the structure of the epidermis and its outgrowths in the frog and the rabbit.

5. Describe the organs of circulation (heart and main arteries and veins) and respiration in the frog in its mature and immature states.

6. Give a brief account of the physiology of respiration. Describe fully the means by which respiration is effected in the following animals:—frog, amphioxus, rabbit, and dog-fish.

7. Describe the minute structure of the blood of the rabbit, frog, and amphioxus.

8. Describe and illustrate by means of sketches the chief points of difference between the skeleton of the rabbit as a typical mammal, and that of the common frog as a typical amphibian.

9. (*a*) Explain what is meant by the term “central nervous system.” (*b*) Describe the tissue elements which enter into its composition. (*c*) Explain, as far as you can, the function of each structure described. (*d*) How is the central nervous system developed in the frog, and (*e*) in the rabbit? (*f*) What conclusions may be drawn from the facts stated as to the origin of the central nervous system in evolution?

10. Give an account of the structure (including histology) and of the functions of the spinal cord and spinal nerves of the frog.

11. Give a description of the minute structure and chemical characters of the following tissues as seen in the frog:—cartilage, bone, muscle. From which of the primary cell-layers of the embryo are they respectively developed?

12. What substance is excreted by the renal organ of a frog, and what relation does this substance bear to the general life of the organism? Describe the parts by which similar excretion is believed to be effected in amoeba, hydra, earthworm, mussel, and lobster.

13. Describe, with illustrative sketches, the structure of the connective tissue, cartilage, and muscular tissue of a frog. Also describe the structure of the muscular tissue of the lobster and snail.

14. Give an account of the more important features in the development of the frog.

15. Describe and compare the structure of the renal organs in a frog and a rabbit.

16. Give an account of the structure of the genito-urinary organs of the frog. Compare these organs of the frog with those of the dog-fish and of the rabbit. Distinguish in each case the conditions of the two sexes, and describe briefly the microscopic structure and development of the ova and of the spermatozoa.

17. Describe, with diagrams, the arrangement of the urinary and generative organs in the male of (*a*) the rabbit, (*b*) the dog-fish, and (*c*) the frog; (*d*) point out the most important differences between them.

18. (*a*) Describe the structure of the ovarian egg of the rabbit, (*b*) and of the pigeon, (*c*) and of the frog; (*d*) from what part of the embryo do they originate? (*e*) What is the structure and origin of the ovarian follicle in the rabbit, and (*f*) of the ovarian stroma? (*g*) What is the "granulosa" and what the "zona pellucida"?

19. Describe the pre-segmentation changes, mode of impregnation, and early stages of development in the ovum of the frog, as far as the closure of the neural canal.

20. Illustrate, with diagrams, from the structure of typical organisms, the principle of repetition of similar parts.

Note on Making Comparisons.

Students preparing for examinations are frequently troubled by "comparison" questions. Tabulation is often recommended, but we are inclined to favour a rather more flexible plan of marking off differences and resemblances. In tabulation a considerable loss of time is occasioned by writing down the features of both the things compared, and this is a serious consideration for the examinee. We advise him therefore, first, if he possibly can, to draw side by side and in corresponding positions the two things under consideration, and then, going over them in a methodical way, to state simply the difference between each homologous part. We append as examples three test answers actually submitted (with figures) in "Correspondence" work.

1. Compare the brain of the frog with that of the rabbit.

In the frog's *fore-brain*—

The olfactory lobes are fused in the middle line.

There is no corpus callosum, nor is there a middle commissure to the third ventricle.

The cerebral hemispheres are not convoluted, and, looked at from the dorsal aspect, do not hide the thalamencephalon and mid-brain.

The pineal gland lies in the cranial wall and not deeply between the hemispheres, and its stalk is longer and tilts forward.

In the *mid-brain*—

The optic lobes are two, instead of being corpora quadrigemina, and hollow.

In the *hind-brain*—

The cerebellum is a very small transverse band, and has no lateral parts.

The medulla is relatively larger.

There are no spinal accessory nor hypoglossal nerves to the brain.

2. Compare the vertebrae of dog-fish, rabbit, and frog.

The centra of the dog-fish are amphi-coclous (*i.e.*, hollow at either end).

The centra of the rabbit are flat-faced.

The centra of the frog are procoelous (hollow in front).

The notochord persists *between* the centra in the dog-fish and rabbit, *within* the centra in the frog.

The centra of the rabbit have epiphyses, absent in the dog-fish and frog.

The transverse processes of the rabbit typically bear ribs. Short ribs occur in the dog-fish, but their homology with those of the rabbit is doubtful. The frog has no ribs.

The interneural plates are peculiar to the dog-fish in this comparison.

3. Compare the skull of the dog with that of the frog.

The Brain Case—

Of the frog is a cylindrical box, from which the otic capsules project conspicuously on either side. It contains only two ossifications in its cartilaginous substance (the sphen-ethmoid and the ex-occipital), being protected by the membrane bones, the parieto-frontals above and the parasphenoid below.

In the mammal it is enormously inflated, and the otic capsules are imbedded in its wall. There are supra- and basi- as well as ex-occipital bones; the parasphenoid is (? entirely) gone, and its place is taken by the basi- and pre-sphenoids, and the lateral walls contain fresh paired ossifications, the ali- and orbito-sphenoids—all cartilage bones. The sphenethmoid is perhaps represented in part by the ethmoid.

As a result of the inflation of the brain-case, the squamosal, which slopes downward and outward in the frog, and overlies the cartilaginous suspensorium (quadrate cartilage), has become a constituent of the brain-case wall, and slopes downwardly and in.

Jaw Suspension.

The point of attachment of the jaw has shifted outward, and the original suspensorial cartilage (the quadrate)

has taken on a new and minor function as the incus of the middle ear—the squamosal superseding it as the suspensory part.

Lower Jaw.

Distinct bones in the frog ; one mass in the dog.

Otic Capsule.

Position as specified. *One* centre of ossification in the frog, forming pro-otic ; *several* fuse together and form periotic of the dog.

There is no bulla and no external ear in the frog.

Palate.

In the frog the posterior nares open into the front of the mouth. In the dog the maxillae and palatines send plates down and in (the palatine plates) to cut off a nasal passage from the rest of the buccal chamber, and carry the posterior nares back to the pharynx, thus cutting the vomer off from the mouth roof.

The pterygoids in the dog are much reduced, and do not reach back to the suspensorium.

The frog has no lachrymal bone.

SYLLABUS OF PRACTICAL WORK.

WE would impress upon the student at the outset the importance of some preliminary reading before dissection is undertaken. No one would dream of attempting to explore a deserted city without some previous study of maps and guide-books, but we find again and again students undertaking to explore the complicated anatomy of a vertebrated animal without the slightest, or only the slightest, preparatory reading. This is entirely a mistake. A student should be familiar with the nomenclature of the structures he contemplates examining, he should have some idea of their mutual relations and functions, or his attention will inevitably be diverted by the difficulty of new names and physiological questionings to the neglect of his dissection, and that careful observation of form and mutual position which is the essential object of dissection. On the other hand, it is equally necessary—perhaps more so—to warn students against the bookish fallacy, and to assure them of the absolute impossibility of realizing biological facts from reading alone. Practical work can alone confirm and complete the knowledge to which the text-book is the guide. In scientific teaching it may sometimes be convenient for the thought to precede the thing, but until the thing has been dealt with the knowledge gained is an unsatisfactory and unstable possession.

For such dissection as the subject-matter of this book requires, the following appliances will be needed:—

- (a) Two or three scalpels of various sizes.
- (b) Scissors, which must taper gradually, have straight blades, and be pointed at the ends, and which *must* bite right up to the tips (or they are useless). Two pairs, small and large, are advisable

- (c) *Forceps*, which must hold firmly, and meet truly at the points.
- (d) Two needles set in wooden handles.
- (e) An ordinary watchmaker's eye-glass is very helpful, but not indispensable.
- (f) A dissecting dish—an ordinary pie dish will do—into which melted paraffin wax has been poured, to the depth of, say, three-quarters of an inch, and allowed to solidify. (This wax may be blackened by mixture with lampblack. If the wax floats up at any time, it can, of course, be remelted. Or it may be loaded with lead.)
- (g) A rough table or board (for the rabbit and dog-fish).
- (h) Blanket pins, and ordinary pins.
- (i) A pickle or other wide-mouthed jar, and some common methylated spirit.
- (j) A microscope, with low power of 1 in. or $\frac{1}{2}$ in., and high power $\frac{1}{6}$ in. or $\frac{1}{4}$ in. Glass slips and cover glasses, and a bottle of very weak (1 per cent.) solution of salt.

Animals for dissection may be obtained from the recognised dealers, who usually advertise in such scientific periodicals as *Nature*, *Natural Science*, and *Knowledge*. Sinel (naturalist, Jersey) is the most satisfactory dealer in dog-fish in our experience; Bolton (Malvern) will supply *Amphioxus* through the post; frogs and rabbits may be obtained anywhere. The tame variety of rabbit is quite satisfactory for the purpose of dissection.

The following notes may possibly be of some use to the student; they follow the lines of the work arranged by the author for the evening classes of the University Tutorial College, classes considerably restricted as regards time, when compared with ordinary laboratory workers. Most of the sections below occupied about three hours, but for a student working alone they are more likely to take four or five, and even then it is not probable that they will be so satisfactory as if performed under skilled supervision. There are many points extremely difficult to convey verbally which are elucidated at once by actual demonstration upon a specimen. Each of these dissections should be repeated, and it is well if

a different condition of the type is selected for the repetition—an old one if the first specimen was immature, a female if the first was a male.

THE RABBIT

May be killed by chloroform, or potassium cyanide, or drowned. It may also be readily suffocated with household gas. It should be killed immediately before use, as otherwise the gastric juice attacks the wall of the stomach, and the dissection is, in consequence, rendered extremely disagreeable. A very young rabbit is unsatisfactory as regards the genitalia, but otherwise there is no objection to a little one, and it has this advantage—that it may be immersed more conveniently under water, in a large pie dish, for purposes of fine dissection. The external features of the animal should be examined: eyelids, whiskers and teeth, toes, anus, perineal space on either side of the same, urogenital opening, and position of the ribs, vertebral column, and limb girdles beneath the skin should be made out. Then the animal should be pinned out through the legs, the ventral surface uppermost, the skin opened up along the middle line from pelvic girdle to symphyses of jaw; separated from the body wall below by means of the handle of a scalpel, and turned back; and then the abdominal wall should be cut into and two flaps pinned back to expose its contents. Note the xiphisternum. The caecum and colon will be recognised (§ 16); the stomach, the right and left central, and left lateral lobes of the liver will probably be apparent; and the urinary bladder (especially if distended) in the middle line behind. Without any further dissection, but simply by turning the parts over, all the structures of the abdomen in Figure 1, Sheet I., will be identified. Seek especially for and note particularly, the gall bladder, bile duct, and portal vein, pancreatic duct, sacculus rotundus, vermiform appendix, ureters (by pulling urinary bladder forward), genital ducts (looping over ureters), spleen, kidneys, and adrenals. The vena cava inferior is seen dorsally. The genital duct guides the student to the genital gland; if the subject is a male, the testes may be exposed by dissection, or by pulling the vas deferens gently the scrotal sac will be turned inside out, and the testes

brought into view. The ovary lies exposed without dissection posterior to the kidney. Examine all this carefully, and make small sketches of points of interest—the duodenal loop and the pyloric end of the stomach, for instance; the meeting of colon, cæcum, and sacculus rotundus again; or the urinary bladder and adjacent parts. Note the dorsal aorta and vena cava and their connexions behind. (Compare figure of circulation.) Cut through pelvic girdle, and remove one hind leg, to see the bladder and genital ducts better (*cp.* Sheet X.). Wash away any blood that may flow. Turn all the intestines over to the animal's *right*, and see the dorsal aorta and vena cava inferior of the abdomen, the inferior mesenteric artery, and the spermatic (or ovarian) artery (*cp.*, of course, with figure in book). In front, immediately dorsal to the spleen, is a variable quantity of lymphoidal tissue, which must be very carefully cleared to see the superior mesenteric and coeliac arteries. Separate Spigelian lobe from stomach, and look for vagus nerve descending by oesophagus, solar plexus around the superior mesenteric artery, and thrown up very distinctly by the purple vena cava inferior beneath, and the splanchnic nerve. To see the abdominal sympathetic behind, gently remove the peritoneum that lies on either side of the aorta; blood-vessels will be seen running in between the vertebral bodies, and the sympathetic chain, with its ganglia, made out very distinctly, as it runs across them longitudinally. Now cut oesophagus just in front of stomach, and cut the rectum, cut through the mesentery supporting the intestine, and remove and unravel alimentary canal; cut open, wash out, and examine caecum and stomach. Bleeding to a considerable extent is inevitable, chiefly from the portal vein. The liver had better remain if the same rabbit is to serve for the second dissection.

Second Dissection.—Skin front of thorax and neck. Note subclavian veins running out to fore limbs—avoid cutting these. Cut through ribs and remove front of thorax, to expose its contents; cut up middle line of neck, and clear off small muscle bands, to expose bloodvessels; pick away carefully whatever is left of thymus gland; make out structure of heart and blood-vessels, as described in Chapter III.; note

larynx and trachea. Now proceed to the examination of the nerves of this region. See phrenic nerve, by vena cava inferior, and between heart and lungs, and sympathetic, running over the heads of the ribs. By the common carotids will be found the large white vagus nerve, the greyish sympathetic, and a small branch of X., *the depressor*. Make out branches of X. named in text. The big white cervical spinal nerves will be evident dorsally. Clear forward into the angle between the jaw and the bulla tympani, to see XII. and XI.; IX. will be found lying deeper, dorsal to the carotid artery and body of the hyoid. Compare with figure given of this. Skin the cheek, and see VII. running over it. Cut through malar and remove it; cut through lower jaw-bone and turn it back, to see the third branch of the fifth nerve on its inner side; examine the muscles of eyeball, and remove it, to expose the first and second branches of V.—the latter is especially deep within orbit. Remove, open, wash out, and examine the heart. Shave off the dorsal wall of cranium, to expose hemispheres of brain, and then put the head in strong spirit for a week or so. With a second rabbit, this dissection may advantageously be varied by removing the lower jaw, *cutting through soft palate*, and observing openings of the Eustachian tubes. The tonsils (on the *ventral* side of the soft palate) must not be confused with these. The heart should also be cut out, washed out, and examined. (*Cp.* §§ 38, 44.)

Third Dissection.—(Before this is performed the mammalian skull should have been studied and examined.) Take the head of a rabbit, the brain of which has been hardened by spirit, and carefully remove cranium; be particularly careful in picking away the periotic bone, on account of the flocculi of cerebellum. It is difficult to avoid injury to the pituitary body embedded in the basisphenoid bone. Examine with the help of Sheet VIII. Make the sections there indicated.

THE FROG

May be killed by drowning in dilute methylated spirit, or by chloroform. Take a recently-killed frog, and examine a drop of its blood, spread out on a glass slip, under the microscope; compare it with your own. Before using the high power,

put a cover glass over the object, of course. Scrape the roof of the mouth of the frog gently, to obtain ciliated epithelium, and mount in very weak salt solution—the cilia will still be active. Squamous epithelium may be seen by the student similarly scraping the interior of his own cheek. Take a piece of muscle from one of the frog's limbs, tease out with needles upon a glass slip, and examine. To see the striations clearly, the high power will be needed. Compare a piece of muscle from the wall of the alimentary canal. Similarly examine nerve and connective tissue.

First Dissection.—Pin out the frog in a dissecting dish, ventral surface uppermost, and cover with water. Open up the skin along the mid-ventral line. Note the large sub-cutaneous lymph spaces, the pelvic and pectoral girdles, and the anterior abdominal vein. Cut into the body cavity on one side of this latter, cut across in front of where the vein dips down to liver, and *peel* the body wall away from it. The xiphisternum will probably be cut in this operation. In early spring the females are greatly distended with ova, and the greater portion of the ovary may, with advantage, be removed. The oviduct is dead white then, and larger and much more in evidence than the (pinkish) intestine even. Turn over the viscera, and compare with Sheet XI.; one lung is often found greatly inflated, and then projects back into the body cavity; the stomach is, in some cases, pushed forward and hidden behind the shoulder girdle. Observe the allantoic bladder, the spleen, gall bladder, portal vein, and pancreas. By squeezing the gall bladder gently, the bile duct will be injected with bile, and will be apparent if the stomach is turned over. The oesophagus, just in front of the stomach, should be cut through, and the rectum, and the mesentery and alimentary canal supported by it, removed. This will expose the urogenital organs. (*Vide* Figures given.) These vary greatly, especially in the females, at different seasons. The condition figured would be seen in late autumn, or winter. In spring females are often found copulating with males, and then the ovary itself is inconspicuous, while the lower part of the oviduct is enormously distended with ova, so as to be mistaken sometimes for the ovary by those who fail to note

that the ova are enclosed by a thin semi-transparent skin (wall of oviduct). The vena cava inferior is seen between the kidneys and the renal portal vein beside the ureter. Cutting through the mesentery supporting the kidney laterally, the dorsal aorta is exposed, and on either side of it the sympathetic chain and rami communicantes, often tinged with black pigment. This black pigment is a frequent but variable feature of the frog's anatomy, and usually dapples or blackens the testes, and also sometimes darkens the otherwise pale pink arteries. Behind the kidneys the sciatic plexus also becomes visible. Careful drawings should be made. Cut off the head of the frog, shave off top of brain case, and put the head in strong spirit.

Second Dissection.—A fresh frog is required. Pin out under water as before, and open up body cavity. Now carefully remove the muscle from the ventral portion of the shoulder girdle, to expose the clavicles and coracoids. Cut away xiphisternum, and then cut through clavicles and coracoids on either side, and remove ventral part of shoulder girdle, to expose the heart. Open out the cut portions of body wall and pin. The veins going towards the heart should now, with a little examination, be evident. Make out the external jugular, the innominate, and its two branches, and the pulmo-cutaneous and vena cava superior. Clear by carefully picking away any shreds of semi-transparent tissue. Make out, by feeling, the position of the hyoid body, and of its anterior cornua. Note the hypoglossal nerve (first spinal) running ventral to this, and the ninth cranial nerve, running parallel to it but dorsal to the hyoid—hidden therefore by the hyoid, and reappearing in front. The vagus may also be made out less distinctly, running “postero-ventrally” towards the heart. By clearing the muscle by the ramus of the jaw, VII. may be seen, and the third branch of V., running across the jaw at about the middle of its length. Pick off the thin transparent pericardium from the heart very carefully, and proceed to cut away all the veins made out. The truncus arteriosus may then be followed up as it branches. Note all the branches shown in the figures in this book. The precise position of the vessels will vary to a certain extent with the

attitude in which the frog is pinned. The cutaneous artery will prevent the student following up the aortic arch until it is cut; then the arch may be followed round until it meets its fellow to form the dorsal aorta. Note the sympathetic again. Make careful drawings of all this. Cut off lower jaw, and note posterior nares and Eustachian openings. If time allows, remove the heart, and examine by cutting open and washing. (*Cp.* § 44.) Remove eyeball, to see the first and second branches of the fifth nerve, and the Vidian (*i.e.* palatine) branch of the seventh.

Third Dissection.—Read the account of the frog's skull carefully. Take the head of a recently killed frog and drop into boiling water for a minute. Then pick off, very carefully, muscle, connective tissue, nerves, &c., to clear the cranio-facial apparatus; examine the bones, compare with figures given in this book, and draw. Take the head, which has been in spirit a fortnight or so, pick away cranium, and compare brain with figures given. Examine ventricles, by taking sections, after drawings have been made.

THE DOG-FISH.

First Dissection.—Examine external characters, nasal grooves—no internal nares—fins, spiracle, scales passing over lips, and cloaca. Cut off tail below the cloacal opening. The males are distinguished by the large claspers along the inner edge of the pelvic fin. Open up body cavity. Usually this is in a terrible mess in the fish supplied by dealers, through the *post-mortem* digestion of the stomach. Wash out all this under a stream of water from a tap or water-bottle. Frequently the testes are washed out of the male in this operation and ova from the loose ovaries in the female. Now compare with figure given in this book, allowing for the collapse of the stomach, if it has occurred. Cut through the oesophagus and rectum, and remove alimentary canal from body; cut open and wash out the intestine, and examine spiral valve. Now make a careful examination of the cloaca and its apertures, and dissect away the peritoneum hiding the kidney. In the female find the openings of the oviducts in front of the liver.

Remove liver, and cut off body now behind pectoral fin. Before throwing tail and hinder part of body away, note the myotomes of body wall, the notochord and vertebral body, neural canal, and, in the tail, the haemal canal. (See p. 87.) The notochord is a soft jelly. Cut away the ventral part of the pectoral girdle, to open pericardium. With a seeker, make out the pericardio-peritoneal opening. Cut into the sinus venosus, and run seekers into the Cuvierian and hepatic sinuses. Cut open the Cuvierian and posterior cardinal sinuses, and run seekers into their affluents. Dissect along the truncus arteriosus to afferent branchials. Cut away the heart and oesophagus; run a seeker up the dorsal aorta and cut along it from the ventral side to the subclavian and efferent branchial arteries. Skin the top of the head. Note, while doing this, the yellow jelly-like sense-tubuli beneath the skin. Shave off top of brain-case, and leave the head in spirit for a week or so.

Second Dissection.—Place the head with the ventral side downward; skin all the dorsal surface as yet unskinned. Refer to book for precise position of the anterior cardinal sinus, and then cut down through body wall into this just over gill slits. The tenth nerve will become visible, with its "slit" branches athwart the floor of the sinus. Clear to make this more evident, and make out its lateral line and visceral branches, and the ninth nerve. The pharyngo-branchials may be felt beneath the sinus. Run a seeker from the dorsal aorta to the efferent branchials. Proceed now to orbit, and, without any dissection beyond the removal of skin, make out recti and oblique muscles of eyeball, and the optic, third, and fourth nerves. Cut through these structures carefully and remove, exposing nerves seven and five, as described and figured in the text. Examine the otic capsule by taking successive slices through it to show the labyrinth of the ear. Examine brain.

AMPHIOXUS.

Two specimens of this type should be obtained. It should be examined entire by the naked eye and with the low

power of the microscope. Immersion in glycerine will render it more transparent; or it may be cleared with oil of cloves, put up temporarily in that, or permanently in Canada balsam. One specimen should then be pinned out in the dissecting dish, ventral side uppermost, and the atrium opened to expose liver and pharynx. A part of the pharynx may be examined with the low power to see the form of the gill slits. The second specimen should be soaked in turpentine for some time, and then dropped into melted paraffin wax. Transverse sections may then be cut with a razor, the paraffin wax removed from these by solution in turpentine, the turpentine in its turn dissolved out by alcohol, and the sections, after immersion in oil of cloves, may be transferred to Canada balsam for examination and preservation. This work should not be attempted until some practical histological work has been done in botany, and it may be altogether avoided by the purchase of stained and mounted sections.

DEVELOPMENT.

Laboratory work in this portion of the science is not usually undertaken by elementary students of biology, but the reader will probably find it helpful, in the realization of the facts given in this book, to look out for frog spawn in February and March, and to catch and examine tadpoles of various sizes. A small dissecting dish may be made by pouring melted paraffin wax into one of those shallow china pots chemists use for cold-cream, and tadpoles may be pinned out with entomologists' pins and dissected with needles. But this is a work of supererogation. Partially incubated hen's eggs may be obtained at a small cost almost anywhere, and the later stages profitably examined and dissected under warm water. For a clear understanding of the allantois and amnion, this last is almost indispensable. A few microscopic slides of sections of embryonic chicks should also be compared with our rough diagrams.

Select List of Books

2

IN THE

University Tutorial Series

PUBLISHED AT THE



UNIVERSITY CORRESPONDENCE COLLEGE PRESS

(W. B. CLIVE, 13 BOOKSELLERS ROW, STRAND, W.C.)

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
LATIN AND GREEK CLASSICS	3-5
LATIN AND GREEK GRAMMARS, ETC.	6
ROMAN AND GRECIAN HISTORY	7
FRENCH	8
ENGLISH HISTORY	8
ENGLISH LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE	9
ENGLISH CLASSICS	10
MENTAL AND MORAL SCIENCE	11
MATHEMATICS AND MECHANICS	12, 13
SCIENCES	14, 15
DIRECTORIES—THE UNIVERSITY CORRESPONDENT	16

A List of Books for London University Students, classified for the various Examinations, List of Books for the Cambridge and Oxford Locals and the College of Preceptors Examinations, and also the Complete Catalogue of the University Tutorial Series, may be had post free on application to W. B. CLIVE, University Correspondence College Press Warehouse, 13 Booksellers Row, Strand, W.C.

DECEMBER, 1894.

The University Tutorial Series.

General Editor: WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.C.S., F.R.A.S.

Classical Editor: B. J. HAYES, M.A.

The object of the UNIVERSITY TUTORIAL SERIES is to provide candidates for examinations and learners generally with text-books which shall convey in the simplest form sound instruction in accordance with the latest results of scholarship and scientific research. Important points are fully and clearly treated, and care has been taken not to introduce details which are likely to perplex the beginner.

The Publisher will be happy to entertain applications from Schoolmasters for specimen copies of any of the books mentioned in this List.

SOME PRESS OPINIONS.

"The special use of such manuals as those published by the University Correspondence College is that they help the student to systematise his knowledge, and also indicate clearly and definitely the plan to be pursued."—*Journal of Education*.

"This series of educational works, now almost forming a scholastic library in itself."—*Educational Review*.

"The more we see of these excellent manuals the more highly do we think of them."—*Schoolmaster*.

"We have often had occasion to speak in terms of high praise of the University Correspondence College Tutorial Series."—*Board Teacher*.

"As near perfection as can be desired."—*Teachers' Aid*.

"This valuable library."—*School Board Chronicle*.

"This excellent and widely appreciated series."—*Freeman's Journal*.

"The notes have the merit of brevity and practical directness."—*Guardian*.

"As usual with the series, little is omitted that might have found a place in the books, and no point seems unbroached."—*Educational Times*.

"The work of men who have proved themselves to be possessed of the special qualifications necessary."—*School Guardian*.

"By this time every one knows the material and uniform excellence of this series."—*Praetical Teacher*.

"The evident care, the clearly conceived plan, the genuine scholarship, and the general excellence of the productions in this series, give them, for the special purpose they are intended to accomplish, high claims to commendation—especially the commendation of diligent use."—*Educational News*.

"This useful series of text-books."—*Nature*.

"Has done excellent work in promoting higher education."—*Morning Post*.

Latin and Greek Classics.

(See also page 4.)

Caesar.—*Gallic War, Book I.* By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and F. G. PLAISTOWE, M.A. Camb. 1s. 6d.

"A clearly printed text, a good introduction, an excellent set of notes, and an historical and geographical index, make up a very good edition at a very small price."—*The Schoolmaster.*

Cicero.—*De Amicitia.* By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. 1s. 6d.

Cicero.—*De Senectute.* By the same Editors. 1s. 6d.

"The notes, although full, are simple."—*Educational Times.*

Horace.—*Odes, Books I.—III.* By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and B. J. HAYES, M.A. Lond. and Camb. 1s. 6d. each.

"Notes which leave no difficulty unexplained."—*The Schoolmaster.*

"The Notes (on Book III.) are full and good, and nothing more can well be demanded of them."—*Journal of Education.*

Livy.—*Book I.* By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. *Third Edition.* 2s. 6d.

"The notes are concise, dwelling much on grammatical points and dealing with questions of history and archaeology in a simple but interesting fashion."—*Education.*

Vergil.—*Aeneid, Book I.* By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. 1s. 6d.

Xenophon.—*Anabasis, Book I.* By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and F. L. D. RICHARDSON, B.A. Lond. 1s. 6d.

"The notes are all that could be desired."—*Schoolmaster.*

The above editions of LATIN and GREEK CLASSICS are on the following plan:—

A short INTRODUCTION gives an account of the Author and his chief works, the circumstances under which he wrote, and his style, dialect, and metre, where these call for notice.

The TEXT is based on the latest and best editions, and is clearly printed in large type.

The distinctive feature of the NOTES is the omission of parallel passages and controversial discussions of difficulties, and stress is laid on all the important points of grammar and subject-matter. Information as to persons and places mentioned is grouped together in an HISTORICAL AND GEOGRAPHICAL INDEX; by this means the expense of procuring a Classical Dictionary is rendered unnecessary.

The works in the *Matriculation* series have been edited with a view to meeting the wants of beginners, while the *Graduation* series furnishes suitably annotated editions for the more advanced student. A complete list is given overleaf.

.....

Editions of Latin and Greek Classics.

The following editions are now ready, with the exception of those marked * (in the press), and those marked † (in preparation).

MATRICULATION SERIES.

	s. d.		s. d.
CAESAR—Gallic War, Bk. 1	1 6	LIVY—Bk. 21	2 6
CAESAR—Gallie War, Bk. 5	1 6	*OVID—Heroides 1, 2, 3, 5,	
CAESAR—Gallie War, Bk. 6	1 6	7, 12	2 6
CAESAR—Gallic War, Bk. 7	2 6	OVID—Metamorphoses, Bk. 11	1 6
CAESAR—Gallie War, Bk. 7,		OVID—Tristia, Bk. 1	1 6
Ch. 1-68	1 6	OVID—Tristia, Bk. 3	1 6
CICERO—De Amicitia	1 6	SALLUST—Catiline	2 6
CICERO—De Senectute	1 6	SOPHOCLES—Antigone	2 6
*CICERO—In Catilinam, Bk. 3	1 6	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 1	1 6
CICERO—Pro Arehia	1 6	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 3	1 6
CICERO—Pro Balbo	1 6	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 5	1 6
†EURIPIDES—Andromache	3 6	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 6	1 6
HOMER—Iliad, Bk. 6	1 6	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 7	1 6
HOMER—Odyssey, Bk. 17	1 6	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 9	1 6
HORACE—Odes, Bk. 1	1 6	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 10	1 6
HORACE—Odes, Bk. 2	1 6	XENOPHON—Anabasis, Bk. 1	1 6
HORACE—Odes, Bk. 3	1 6	XENOPHON—Hellenica, 3	3 6
HORACE—Odes, Bk. 4	1 6	XENOPHON—Hellenica, 4	3 6
LIVY—Bk. 1	2 6		

GRADUATION SERIES.

	s. d.		s. d.
AESCHYLUS—Prometheus		JUVENAL—Satires, 1, 3, 4	3 6
Vinetus	2 6	JUVENAL—Satires, 8, 10, 13	2 6
ARISTOPHANES—Plutus	2 6	LIVY—Bk. 3	3 6
CICERO—Ad Atticum, Bk. 4	3 6	LIVY—Bk. 5	2 6
CICERO—De Finibus, Bk. 1	2 6	OVID—Fasti, Bks. 3, 4	2 6
†CICERO—De Finibus, Bk. 2	3 6	PLATO—Phaedo	3 6
†CICERO—Pro Milone	3 6	†SOPHOCLES—Ajax	3 6
CICERO—Pro Plancio	2 6	SOPHOCLES—Electra	3 6
HERODOTUS—Bk. 6	2 6	TACITUS—Annals, Bk. 1	2 6
HERODOTUS—Bk. 8	3 6	TACITUS—Annals, Bk. 2	2 6
HOMER—Odyssey, Bks. 9, 10	2 6	TACITUS—Histories, Bk. 1	3 6
HOMER—Odyssey, Bks. 11, 12	2 6	THUCYDIDES—Bk. 7	3 6
HOMER—Odyssey, Bks. 13, 14	2 6	†VERGIL—Georgics, Bks.	
HORACE—Epistles	3 6	1, 2	3 6
†HORACE—Epodes	1 6	*XENOPHON—Oeconomicus	4 6
HORACE—Satires	4 6		

Vocabularies and Test Papers.

The VOCABULARY contains, arranged in the order of the Text, words with which the learner is likely to be unacquainted. The principal parts of verbs are given, and (when there is any difficulty about it) the parsing of the word as it occurs in the Text. The Vocabulary is interleaved with writing paper.

Two series of TEST PAPERS are, as a rule, provided, of which the first and easier series is devoted entirely to translation, accidence, and very elementary points of Syntax; the second, which is intended for use the last time the book is read through, deals with more advanced points.

	s. d.		s. d.
ACTS OF THE APOSTLES ..	1 0	LIVY—Bk. 5	1 0
ÆSCHYLUS — Prometheus		LIVY—Bk. 21	1 0
Vinetus	1 0	OVID—Fasti, Bks. 3 and 4..	1 0
CAESAR—Gallie War, Bk. 1	1 0	*OVID—Heroides, 1, 2, 3, 5,	
CAESAR—Gallie War, Bk. 5	1 0	7, 12	1 6
CAESAR—Gallie War, Bk. 6	1 0	OVID—Metamorphoses, Bk.	
CAESAR—Gallie War, Bk. 7	1 6	11	1 0
CICERO—De Amicitia	1 0	OVID—Tristia, Bk. 1	1 0
CICERO—De Senectute	1 0	OVID—Tristia, Bk. 3	1 0
†CICERO—In Catilinam, Bk. 3	1 0	SALLUST—Catiline	1 0
CICERO—Pro Archia	1 0	SOPHOCLES—Antigone	1 0
CICERO—Pro Balbo	1 0	SOPHOCLES—Electra	1 0
CICERO—Pro Cluentio	1 0	TACITUS—Annals, Bk. 1....	1 0
†CICERO—Pro Milone	1 0	TACITUS—Histories, Bk. 1..	1 0
CICERO—Pro Planeio	1 0	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 1....	1 0
EURIPIDES—Ion	1 0	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 3....	1 0
HERODOTUS—Bk. 6	1 0	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 5....	1 0
HERODOTUS—Bk. 8	1 0	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 6....	1 0
HOMER—Iliad, Bk. 6	1 0	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bk. 7....	1 0
HOMER—Odyssey, Bk. 17 ..	1 0	VERGIL—Aeneid, Bks. 9, 10	1 0
HORACE—Epistles	1 0	VERGIL—Georgics, Bks. 1, 2	1 0
HORACE—Odes, Bks. 1-4, each	1 0	XENOPHON—Anabasis, Bk. 1	1 0
HORACE—Satires	1 0	XENOPHON — Cyropaedeia,	
LIVY—Bk. 1	1 0	Bks. 1 and 5, each	1 0
LIVY—Bk. 3	1 0	†XENOPHON, Oeconomus..	1 0

Latin and Greek.

GRAMMARS AND READERS.

Greek Reader, The Tutorial, or PROOEMIA GRAECA. By A. WAUGH YOUNG, M.A. Lond., Gold Medallist in Classics. 2s. 6d.

Higher Greek Reader: A Course of 132 Extracts from the best writers, in Three Parts, with an Appendix containing the Greek Unscens set at B.A. Lond. 1877—1893. 3s. 6d.

The Tutorial Latin Grammar. By B. J. HAYES, M.A. Lond. and Camb., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. *Second Edition.* 3s. 6d.

"Practical experience in teaching and thorough familiarity with details are plainly recognisable in this new Latin Grammar. Great pains have been taken to bring distinctly before the mind all those main points which are of fundamental importance and require firm fixture in the memory, and the illustrative examples have been gathered with much care from the classics most usually read for examinations. Though full, it is not overcrowded with minutiae."—*Educational News.*

"It is accurate and full without being overloaded with detail, and varieties of type are used with such effect as to minimise the work of the learner. Tested in respect of any of the crucial points, it comes well out of the ordeal."—*Schoolmaster.*

The Preceptors' Latin Course.

[In preparation.]

Latin Composition and Syntax. With copious EXERCISES. By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and J. H. HAYDON, M.A. Camb. and Lond. *Third Edition.* 2s. 6d.

The more advanced portions of the book-work are denoted by an asterisk, and the relative importance of rules and exceptions is shown by variety of type. Each Exercise is divided into three sections of progressive difficulty.

"This useful little book."—*Journal of Education.*

"This is one of the best manuals on the above subject that we have met with for some time. Simplicity of statement and arrangement: apt examples illustrating each rule; exceptions to these adroitly stated just at the proper place and time, are among some of the striking characteristics of this excellent book. Every advantage too has been taken of printing and type, to bring the leading statements prominently before the eye and mind of the reader. It will not only serve as an admirable class-book, but from its table of contents and its copious index will prove to the private student an excellent reference book as well."—*The Schoolmaster.*

"The clearness and concise accuracy of this book throughout are truly remarkable."—*Education.*

"The arrangement and order are exceedingly good."—*School Board Chronicle.*

The Tutorial Latin Reader. 1s. 6d. With VOCABULARY. 2s. 6d.

"A soundly practical work."—*The Guardian.*

Roman and Grecian History.

The Tutorial History of Rome. (To A.D. 14.) By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. With Maps. 3s. 6d.

"It is well and clearly written."—*Saturday Review*.

A History of Rome from B.C. 31 to A.D. 96: The Early Principate. By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and J. H. HAYDON, M.A. Camb. and Lond. 2s. 6d.

"Accurate, and in accordance with the authorities."—*Journal of Education*.

"It is deserving of the highest praise. All that the student can require for his examination is supplied in scholarly shape, and in so clear a manner that the task of the learner is made comparatively easy."—*Literary World*.

A Longer History of Rome. The following volumes are ready or in preparation:—

1. **History of Rome, B.C. 287-202: The Struggle for Empire.** By W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. 4s. 6d.
2. **History of Rome, B.C. 202-133: Rome under the Oligarchs.** By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. 4s. 6d.
3. **History of Rome, B.C. 133-78.** By W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. *[In preparation.]*
4. **History of Rome, B.C. 78-31: The Making of the Monarchy.** By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon. 4s. 6d.
5. **History of Rome, B.C. 31 to A.D. 96.** (*See above.*)

A History of Greece. To be completed in Six Volumes:—

1. **Early Grecian History.** A Sketch of the Historic Period, and its Literature, to 495 B.C. By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. 3s. 6d.

"For those who require a knowledge of the period no better book could be recommended."—*Educational Times*.

2. *Vol. II. will cover the period 495-431 B.C.*

- 3, 4. **History of Greece, B.C. 431-371.** By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon. 6s. 6d. *[In preparation.]*

5. **History of Greece, B.C. 371-323: The Decline of Hellas.** By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon. 4s. 6d.

6. **History of Sicily, B.C. 490-289, from the Tyranny of Gelon to the Death of Agathocles, with a History of Literature.** By A. H. ALLCROFT, M.A. Oxon., and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. 3s. 6d.

"We can bear high testimony to its merits."—*Schoolmaster*.

French.

The Tutorial French Accidence. By ERNEST WEEKLEY, M.A. Lond.
3s. 6d.

"The essentials of the accidence of the French Language are skilfully exhibited in carefully condensed synoptic sections."—*Educational News*.

"A most practical and able compilation."—*Public Opinion*.

"The manual is an excellent one—clear, well-arranged, and if not quite exhaustive, at least very fairly complete."—*Glasgow Herald*.

"A simply expounded and serviceable handbook."—*Scotsman*.

The Tutorial French Syntax. 3s. 6d.

[In preparation.]

The Preceptors' French Course.

[In preparation.]

The Preceptors' French Reader. With Vocabulary. 1s. 6d.

[In preparation.]

French Prose Reader. Edited by S. BARLET, B. ès Sc., Examiner in French to the College of Preceptors, and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. With VOCABULARY. *Second Edition.* 2s. 6d.

"The book is very well adapted to the purpose for which it is intended."—*Schoolmaster*.

"Admirably chosen extracts. They are so selected as to be thoroughly interesting and at the same time thoroughly illustrative of all that is best in French literature."—*School Board Chronicle*.

Advanced French Reader: Containing passages in prose and verse representative of all the modern Authors. Edited by S. BARLET, B. ès Sc., Examiner in French to the College of Preceptors, and W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. 3s. 6d.

"Chosen from a large range of good modern authors, the book provides excellent practice in 'Unseens.'"—*The Schoolmaster*.

English History.

The Tutorial History of England. By C. S. FEARENSIDE, M.A. Oxon.

[In preparation.]

The Intermediate Text-Book of English History: a Longer History of England. By C. S. FEARENSIDE, M.A. Oxon., and A. JOHNSON EVANS, M.A. Camb. With Maps and Plans.

VOLUME I., to 1485.

[In preparation.]

VOLUME II., 1485 to 1603. 5s. 6d.

VOLUME III., 1603 to 1714.

[In the press.]

VOLUME IV., 1685 to 1801. 4s. 6d.

"The results of extensive reading seem to have been photographed upon a small plate, so that nothing of the effect of the larger scene is lost."—*Teachers' Monthly*.

"His genealogical tables and his plans of the great battles are very well done, as also are the brief biographical sketches which come in an appendix at the end."—*Literary Opinion*.

"It is lively; it is exact; the style is vigorous and has plenty of swing; the facts are numerous, but well balanced and admirably arranged."—*Education*.

English Language and Literature.

The English Language: Its History and Structure. By W. H. Low,
M.A. Lond. *Second Edition.* 3s. 6d.

CONTENTS:—The Relation of English to other Languages—Survey of the Chief Changes that have taken place in the Language—Sources of our Vocabulary—The Alphabet and the Sounds of English—Grimm's Law—Gradation and Mutation—Transposition, Assimilation, Addition and Disappearance of Sounds in English—Introductory Remarks on Grammar—The Parts of Speech, etc.—Syntax—Parsing and Analysis—Metre—Examination Questions.

"A clear workmanlike history of the English language done on sound principles."
—*Saturday Review*.

"The author deals very fully with the source and growth of the language. The parts of speech are dealt with historically as well as grammatically. The work is scholarly and accurate."—*Schoolmaster*.

"The history of the language and etymology are both well and fully treated."—*Teachers' Monthly*.

"Aptly and cleverly written."—*Teachers' Aid*.

"The arrangement of the book is devised in the manner most suited to the student's convenience, and most calculated to impress his memory."—*Lyceum*.

"It is in the best sense a scientific treatise. There is not a superfluous sentence."
—*Educational News*.

The Intermediate Text-Book of English Literature. By W. H. Low,
M.A. Lond.

VOLUME I., to 1558. 3s. 6d.

[*In preparation.*]

VOLUME II., 1558 to 1660. 3s. 6d.

VOLUME III., 1660 to 1798. 3s. 6d.

Vols. II. and III., bound together, 5s. 6d.

"Really judicious in the selection of the details given."—*Saturday Review*.

"Designed on a thoroughly sound principle. Facts, dates, and representative quotations are plentiful. The critical extracts are judiciously chosen, and Mr. Low's own writing is clear, effective for its purpose, and evidently the result of thorough knowledge and a very considerable ability to choose between good and bad."—*National Observer*.

"It affords another example of the author's comprehensive grasp of his subject, combined with a true teacher's power of using such judicious condensation that the more salient points are brought clearly into view."—*Teachers' Monthly*.

"Mr. Low has succeeded in giving a very readable and lucid account of the literature of the time."—*Literary World*.

"Mr. Low's book forms a serviceable student's digest of an important period in our literature."—*Schoolmaster*.

"The style is terse and pointed. The representative quotations are aptly and judiciously chosen. The criticisms are well grounded, clearly expressed and modestly presented."—*Morning Post*.

A Middle English Reader. By S. J. EVANS, M.A. Lond.

[*In preparation.*]

English Classics.

Addison.—*Essays on Milton, Notes on.* By W. H. LOW, M.A. 2s.

Aelfric's Homilies, Glossary to, in order of the Text. By A. J. WYATT, M.A. Lond., and H. H. JOHNSON, B.A. Lond. 2s. 6d.

Chaucer.—*Prologue, Knight's Tale.* Edited by A. J. WYATT, M.A. Lond. 2s. 6d. *[In the press.]*

Dryden.—*Essay on Dramatic Poesy.* Edited by W. H. LOW, M.A. Lond. TEXT and NOTES. 3s. 6d. Or separately, 2s. each.

Goldsmith.—*Poems.* Edited by AUSTIN DOBSON. 2s. 6d.

Havelok the Dane. A Close TRANSLATION, preceded by the Additional Notes and Corrections issued in Prof. Skeat's New Edition. By A. J. WYATT, M.A. Lond. 3s.

Milton.—*Samson Agonistes.* Edited by A. J. WYATT, M.A. Lond. 2s. 6d.

"A capital Introduction. The notes are excellent."—*Educational Times.*

Milton.—*Sonnets.* Edited by W. F. MASOM, M.A. Lond. *Second Edition.* 1s. 6d.

Saxon Chronicle, The, from 800-1001 A.D. A TRANSLATION. By W. H. LOW, M.A. Lond. 3s.

Shakespeare.—*Henry VIII.* With INTRODUCTION and NOTES by W. H. LOW, M.A. Lond. *Second Edition.* 2s.

Shakespeare.—*Richard II.* Edited by Prof. W. J. ROLFE. (Harper Bros., New York.) 2s.

Shakespeare.—*Twelfth Night.* Edited by Prof. W. J. ROLFE. (Harper Bros., New York.) 2s.

Sheridan.—*The Rivals.* Edited by W. H. LOW, M.A. Lond. 1s.

"A fully annotated edition . . . complete and thoroughly workmanlike."—*Education.*

Spenser's Shepherd's Calender, Notes on, with an INTRODUCTION. By A. J. WYATT, M.A. Lond. 2s.

Mental and Moral Science.

Ethics, Manual of. By J. S. MACKENZIE, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, Examiner in the University of Aberdeen.
Second Edition. 6s. 6d.

"In writing this book Mr. Mackenzie has produced an earnest and striking contribution to the ethical literature of the time."—*Mind*.

"This excellent manual."—*International Journal of Ethics*.

"Mr. Mackenzie may be congratulated on having presented a thoroughly good and helpful guide to this attractive, yet elusive and difficult, subject."—*Schoolmaster*.

"It is a most admirable student's manual."—*Teachers' Monthly*.

"Mr. Mackenzie's book is as nearly perfect as it could be. It covers the whole field, and for perspicuity and thoroughness leaves nothing to be desired. The pupil who masters it will find himself equipped with a sound grasp of the subject such as no one book with which we are acquainted has hitherto been equal to supplying. Not the least recommendation is the really interesting style of the work."—*Literary World*.

"Written with lucidity and an obvious mastery of the whole bearing of the subject."—*Standard*.

"No one can doubt either the author's talent or his information. The ground of ethical science is covered by his treatment completely, sensibly, and in many respects brilliantly."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"For a practical aid to the student it is very admirably adapted. It is able, clear, and acute. The arrangement of the book is excellent."—*Newcastle Daily Chronicle*.

Logic, A Manual of. By J. WELTON, M.A. Lond. 2 vols. Vol. I.,
10s. 6d. [Vol. II. in preparation.

This book embraces the entire London B.A. and B.Sc. Syllabus, and renders unnecessary the purchase of the numerous books hitherto used. The relative importance of the sections is denoted by variety of type, and a minimum course of reading is thus indicated.

Vol. I. contains the whole of Deductive Logic, except Fallacies, which will be treated, with Inductive Fallacies, in Vol. II.

"A clear and compendious summary of the views of various thinkers on important and doubtful points."—*Journal of Education*.

"A very good book . . . not likely to be superseded for a long time to come."—*Educational Review*.

"Unusually complete and reliable. The arrangement of divisions and subdivisions is excellent, and cannot but greatly facilitate the study of the subject by the diligent student."—*Schoolmaster*.

"The manual may be safely recommended."—*Educational Times*.

"Undoubtedly excellent."—*Board Teacher*.

Mathematics and Mechanics.

Algebra, The Intermediate Text-Book of.

[*Shortly.*]

Astronomy, Elementary Mathematical. By C. W. C. BARLOW, M.A.
Lond. and Camb., B.Sc. Lond., and G. H. BRYAN, M.A. Camb.,
Fellow of St. Peter's College. *Second Edition*, with ANSWERS.
8s. 6d.

"Probably within the limits of the volume no better description of the methods by which the marvellous structure of scientific astronomy has been built up could have been given."—*Athenæum*.

"Sure to find favour with students of astronomy."—*Nature*.

"This book supplies a distinct want. The diagrams are clear, the style of writing lucid, and the mathematical knowledge required but small."—*Teachers' Monthly*.

"Completely successful."—*Literary World*.

"One noticeable feature of the book is that the more important theorems are carefully illustrated by worked out numerical examples, and are so well arranged and clearly written that the volume ought to serve as a good text-book."—*Bombay Advertiser*.

"A careful examination has led to the verdict that the book is the best of its kind. It is accurate and well arranged, and in every respect meets the requirements for which it has been designed."—*Practical Teacher*.

"It is an admirable text-book."—*School Guardian*.

"It will carry a student a long way in the sound study of astronomy."—*National Observer*.

Coordinate Geometry: The Right Line and Circle. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.R.A.S., and G. H. BRYAN, M.A. *Second Edition*. 3s. 6d.

"It is thoroughly sound throughout, and indeed deals with some difficult points with a clearness and accuracy that has not, we believe, been surpassed."—*Education*.

"An admirable attempt on the part of its authors to realize the position of the average learner, and to provide for the wants of the private student. . . . Frequent exercises and examination papers have been interspersed, and different sizes of type and intelligently drawn figures will afford great assistance in revision."—*Educational Times*.

"Thoroughly practical and helpful."—*Schoolmaster*.

"Thoroughly sound and deals clearly and accurately with difficult points."—*The Indian Engineer*.

"Another of the excellent books published by the University Correspondence College Press. The arrangement of matter and the copious explanations it would be hard to surpass. It is the best book we have seen on the subject."—*Board Teacher*.

"The authors have had exceptional opportunities of appreciating the difficulties of beginners, and they have succeeded in producing a work which will be found especially useful."—*English Mechanic*.

Mathematics and Mechanics—continued.

Coordinate Geometry, Worked Examples in: A Graduated Course on the Right Line and Circle. 2s. 6d.

References are made to the book-work of *Coordinate Geometry*.

Dynamics, Text-Book of. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.R.A.S., and G. H. BRYAN, M.A. 2s.

Geometry of Similar Figures and the Plane. (Euclid VI. and XI.) With numerous Deductions worked and unworked. 3s. 6d.

[*Shortly.*

Hydrostatics, An Elementary Text-Book of. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.R.A.S., and G. H. BRYAN, M.A. [*Shortly.*

Mechanics and Hydrostatics, Worked Examples in: A Graduated Course on the London Matriculation Syllabus. 1s. 6d.

"Will prove itself a valuable aid. Not only are the worked examples well graded, but in many cases explanatory paragraphs give useful hints as to processes. The book has our warm approbation."—*Schoolmaster*.

Mensuration and Spherical Geometry: Being Mensuration of the Simpler Figures and the Geometrical Properties of the Sphere. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.R.A.S., and T. W. EDMONDSON, B.A. Lond. and Camb. 3s. 6d.

"Although intended to meet the requirements of candidates for particular examinations, this book may be used generally with safety. The chief feature in it appears to be the inclusion of proofs of all formulæ presented. It is thus far more than a mere collection of rules and examples."—*Educational Times*.

"The book comes from the hands of experts; we can think of nothing better qualified to enable the student to master this branch of the syllabus, and what is more important still, to promote a correct style in his mathematical manipulations."—*Schoolmaster*.

Mensuration of the Simpler Figures. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., F.R.A.S., and T. W. EDMONDSON, B.A. Lond. and Camb. 2s. 6d.

Statics, Text-Book of. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.R.A.S., and G. H. BRYAN, M.A. 1s. 6d.

Trigonometry, The Tutorial. [*In preparation.*

Trigonometry, Synopsis of Elementary. *Interleaved.* 1s. 6d.

"An admirable little handbook."—*Lyceum*.

"For its purpose no better book could be recommended."—*Educational News*.

"Pithy definitions, numerous formulæ, and terse explanatory notes."—*Schoolmaster*.

"The facts could hardly be better given."—*Freeman's Journal*.

Sciences.

Analysis of a Simple Salt. With a Selection of Model Analyses. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.C.S., and R. W. STEWART, D.Sc. Lond. Third Edition, with TABLES OF ANALYSIS (on linen). 2s. 6d.

"Likely to prove a useful and trustworthy assistance to those for whom it is especially intended."—*Nature*.

"Every help that can be given, short of oral instruction and demonstration, is here given; and not only will the private student find this a welcome aid, but the class-master will be glad of the help furnished by Messrs. Briggs and Stewart, whose names are a guarantee of accurate information."—*Education*.

"Its treatment of the subject in hand is very thorough, and the method is on sound lines."—*Schoolmaster*.

"The selection of model analyses is an excellent feature."—*Educational Times*.

Elementary Qualitative Analysis. By the same Authors. 1s. 6d.

Biology, Text-Book of. By H. G. WELLS, B.Sc. Lond., F.Z.S., F.C.P.

With an INTRODUCTION by Prof. G. B. HOWES, F.L.S., F.Z.S.

PART I., Vertebrates. *Second Edition*. 6s. 6d.

PART II., Invertebrates and Plants. 6s. 6d.

"The *Text-Book of Biology* is a most useful addition to the series already issued, it is well arranged, and contains the matter necessary for an elementary course of vertebrate zoology in a concise and logical order."—*Journal of Education*.

"Mr. Wells' practical experience shows itself on every page; his descriptions are short, lucid, and to the point. We can confidently recommend it."—*Educational Times*.

"The numerous drawings, the well arranged tables, and the careful descriptions will be of the utmost value to the student."—*Schoolmaster*.

"Mr. Wells deals with everything he ought to deal with, and touches nothing that he ought not to touch. For the higher forms of Modern Side we commend this text-book without reserve; for the special student of biology we urge its use with enthusiasm."—*Educational Review*.

Chemistry, Synopsis of Non-Metallic. With an Appendix on Calculations. By WILLIAM BRIGGS, M.A., LL.B., F.C.S. *Interleaved*. 1s. 6d.

"The notes are very clear, and just the thing to assist in the revision of the subject."—*Literary Opinion*.

"Arranged in a very clear and handy form."—*Journal of Education*.

Heat and Light, Elementary Text-Book of. By R. W. STEWART, D.Sc. Lond. *Second Edition*. 3s. 6d.

"A student of ordinary ability who works carefully through this book need not fear the examination."—*The Schoolmaster*.

"It will be found an admirable text-book."—*Educational News*.

"A well-printed and well-illustrated book. It strikes us as a trustworthy guide."—*Practical Teacher*.

"A welcome addition to a useful series."—*School Guardian*.

Sciences—continued.

Magnetism and Electricity, Elementary Text Book of: Being an Abridgment of the *Text-Book of Magnetism and Electricity*, with 143 Diagrams and numerous Questions. By R. W. STEWART, D.Sc. Lond. 3s. 6d.

"Plain and intelligible. It is a capital example of what a good Text-book should be."—*Educational News*.

"Will prove to be particularly helpful to students in general."—*Science and Art*.

"We can heartily recommend it to all who need a text-book."—*Lyceum*.

"This is an admirable volume. . . . A very good point is the number of worked-out examples."—*Teachers' Monthly*.

"Leaves little to be desired."—*Educational Times*.

"Another of his excellent text-books."—*Nature*.

THE TUTORIAL PHYSICS.

I. Sound, Text-Book of. By E. CATCHPOOL, B.Sc. Lond. 3s. 6d.

II. Heat, Text-Book of. With 81 Diagrams and numerous Calculations. By R. W. STEWART, D.Sc. Lond. *Second Edition*. 3s. 6d.

"Clear, concise, well arranged and well illustrated, and, as far as we have tested, accurate."—*Journal of Education*.

"Distinguished by accurate scientific knowledge and lucid explanations."—*Educational Times*.

"The principles of the subject are clearly set forth, and are exemplified by carefully chosen examples."—*Oxford Magazine*.

III. Light, Text-Book of (uniform with the *Text-Book of Heat*). With 111 Diagrams and numerous Calculations. By R. W. STEWART, D.Sc. Lond. *Second Edition*. 3s. 6d.

"The diagrams are neat and accurate, the printing excellent, and the arrangement of the matter clear and precise."—*Practical Teacher*.

"The volumes (*Light and Heat*) will be found well adapted for general use by those students who have already mastered the first principles of physics. The subjects are treated both mathematically and experimentally, and the most important theorems are illustrated by diagrams and figures."—*School Guardian*.

IV. Magnetism and Electricity, Text-Book of. With 159 Diagrams. By R. W. STEWART, D.Sc. Lond. *Second Edition*. 5s. 6d.

"Will be found suitable for general use as an introduction to the study of electrical science."—*Iron*.

"It is thoroughly well done."—*Schoolmaster*.

"The author has been very successful in making portions of the work not ordinarily regarded as elementary appear to be so by his simple exposition of them."—*Teachers' Monthly*.

Directories.

- Matriculation Directory, with Full Answers to the Examination Papers.** (*No. XVII. will be published during the fortnight following the Examination of January 1895.*) Nos. IV., VI., VII., IX., X., XI., XII., XIII., XIV., XV., and XVI. 1s. each, *net*.
- Intermediate Arts Directory, with Full Answers to the Examination Papers** (except in Special Subjects for the Year). (*No. VII. will be published during the fortnight following the Examination of July 1895.*) No. II. (1889) to No. VI. (1893), 2s. 6d. each, *net*.
- Inter. Science and Prelim. Sci. Directory, with Full Answers to the Examination Papers.** (*No. V. will be published during the fortnight following the Examination of July 1895.*) No. I. (1890) to No. IV. (1893), 2s. 6d. each, *net*.
- B.A. Directory, with Full Answers to the Examination Papers** (except in Special Subjects for the Year.) No. I., 1889; II., 1890; III., 1891. 2s. 6d. each, *net*. No. IV., 1893 (with Full Answers to the Papers in Latin, Greek, and Pure Mathematics). 2s. 6d. *net*. (*No. V. will be published in November 1895.*)

The University Correspondent

AND

UNIVERSITY CORRESPONDENCE COLLEGE MAGAZINE.

Issued every Saturday. Price 1d., by Post 1½d.; Half-yearly Subscription, 3s.; Yearly Subscription, 5s. 6d.

THE UNIVERSITY CORRESPONDENT has a wide circulation among Grammar and Middle Class Schools, and, as a weekly journal, offers an excellent medium for Advertisements of POSTS VACANT AND WANTED; no charge for these is made to Yearly Subscribers.

LEADING FEATURES OF "THE UNIVERSITY CORRESPONDENT."

1. *Fortnightly Prizes of One Guinea.*
2. *Frequent Vigilance Prizes (One to Three Guineas).*
3. *Special Prizes (One to Five Guineas).*
4. *Hints and Answers to Students reading for London University.*
5. *Answers to Correspondents on all University Matters.*
6. *Papers set at London Examinations.*
7. *Full Solutions to Matriculation Papers.*
8. *Pass Lists of London University Examinations.*
9. *Calendar of London University Events.*
10. *Latest University News.*
11. *Test Papers (with Answers) for London Matriculation.*
12. *Articles on Special Subjects for London University Examinations.*
13. *A Series of Articles on the Universities of the United Kingdom.*
14. *Ladies' Column.*
15. *Reviews of Current Educational Literature.*
16. *List of Educational Books published during the month.*

